

**Within the Walls Project
Comparing Heritage Values as Action within
Council & Community Asset Transfer Practices,
York, UK 2014-2016**

ADDITIONAL MATERIAL-APPENDICES

KATRINA MARY FOXTON

PhD

University of York

Department of Archaeology

March 2018

Table of Contents

List of Tables	4
List of Figures	4
APPENDIX A.	8
A.i. The Collaborative Doctoral Award (CDA) Brief & Proposal	8
A.ii Ethnographic Individual Interview Topic Schedule	26
A.iii Ethnographic Group Interview	28
A.iv Consent Sheets	29
A.v Exploratory Period Conversations & Events	35
A.vi Data Management Plan	38
A.vii NVivo Themes Sub-Themes	44
A.viii Ongoing Coding Experiences (Memos)	48
A.ix Methodological Reflections	64
A.x Sifting the Moments (Meta-Data Section)	75
APPENDIX B	86
B.i Neighbourhood Plan Process	86
B.ii West Office Fieldnotes	87
B.iii Excel Coding Graphs for West Office Data	126
Appendix C	128
C.i Tithe Barn Restoration Timeline (Full)	129
C.ii Example of Feedback Comments from Trustee	132
C.iii Current Relationship with Locality (Tithe Barn)	139
C.iv Tithe Barn Website Analysis	141
C.v Photograph of Tithe Barn PPG Minutes	143
C.vi Holgate Windmill Timelines	144

C.vii Example of Feedback Comments from Trustees	146
C.viii Current Relationship with Locality (Holgate Windmill)	152
C.ix Archivist's Notes: Courtesy Anna Cook	154
C.x Holgate Windmill York Press Article Analysis	160
C.xi Other York Asset Projects (in 'becoming stages')	164
Appendix D	169
D.i Contextual Discussion on Red Tower's Localities	169
D.ii The Red Tower Diaries	190
D.vi Theme & Case Coding Charts for Red Tower Data	290
D.vii Consultation Report	304
D.viii Paper-based Media	321
Appendix E	332
E.i Comparative Research Question 1	332

List of Tables

Table 1. Individual Interview Topic Schedule	26
Table 2. Ethnographic Group Interview Topic Schedule	28
Table 3. Exploratory Conversations/events	35
Table 4. Fieldnotes Selected for Red Tower Diaries.....	79
Table 5. Coding themes (word coverage) for all CYC domains (for figs 20-25 in Chapter Five)	126
Table 6. Feedback comments and editing process of timeline	146
Table 7. Frequency of Categories of Articles mentioning Holgate Windmill 2001-2017	160
Table 8. Frequency of Types of Images within Categories of Articles 2001-2017.....	161
Table 9. Coding themes for all fieldnotes (fig 81)	292
Table 10. Interactions with people/organisations (case coding) (for fig 82).....	294
Table 11. Coding themes for all Red Tower Supporter Interviews (for fig 83).	297
Table 12. Coding themes for all Residents Interviews (for fig 84).....	299
Table 13. Theme coding for Red Tower Supporter Group Interview	300
Table 14. Theme coding for Wallwalker Group Interview.....	301
Table 15. Theme coding for all photographs across duration of the Red Tower (for fig 87)..	303
Table 16. Summary of Research Answers from Chapters Five, Six & Seven.....	332

List of Figures

Figure 1. NVivo Results of Coding Query on Red Tower Fieldnotes.....	78
Figure 2. NVivo results from Coding Query on Red Tower Images.....	84
Figure 3. Neighbourhood Planning Process, adapted from CYC (2017i).....	86
Figure 4. Tithe Barn Timeline-1.....	129
Figure 5. Tithe Barn Timeline-2.....	130
Figure 6. Tithe Barn Timeline-3.....	131
Figure 7. History of Tithe Barn (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).	141
Figure 8. Support (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).....	141
Figure 9. Homepage (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).	141
Figure 10. Environment (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).....	141

Figure 11. Hire (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).....	142
Figure 12. Weddings (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).....	142
Figure 13. Gallery (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).	142
Figure 14. Holgate Windmill Timeline-1.....	144
Figure 15. Holgate Windmill Timeline-2.....	145
Figure 16. Post-its Board Residents Weekend.....	192
Figure 17. Our first Residents Weekend January 2015 © Lilac.....	193
Figure 18. Capturing the light through rafters on first floor of Red Tower.	198
Figure 19. Volunteers at work Spring Cleaning.....	198
Figure 20. The newly planted Edible Bed.....	199
Figure 21. Brooms & Bicycles.....	199
Figure 22. The FOYW interpretation panels and Walls.....	201
Figure 23.. Flyers and Posters on Community Boards.....	202
Figure 24. Crockery donations from local residents.....	203
Figure 25. Viewing the cranes & student castle development on Navigation Road.....	203
Figure 26. Claire digging a hole for a dogwood shrub.....	207
Figure 27 The growth of the Red Tower Edible Bed.....	208
Figure 28. Clearing the tower in advance of the Heritage Open Day.....	215
Figure 29. Lilac and Jonathan discussing plans for the Heritage Open Day.....	215
Figure 30. Red Tower Hand Rail © Jonathan.....	216
Figure 31. Martha often came for a cup of tea if she saw the Red Tower open.....	217
Figure 32. Ed's 'remit' for community work with the Local People Initiative.....	218
Figure 33. Early openings and fundraising /public awareness © Tash.....	222
Figure 34. Site Visit by the experts as part of the feasibility project.....	225
Figure 35. Mr Compost and Cathy chat during the Christmas Event.....	225
Figure 36. Frank shows me the initial sketches of the Red Tower.....	226
Figure 37. Frank shows me the next phase of architectural drawings.....	227
Figure 38 Flooded Red Tower Dec 2015 © Jonathan.....	227
Figure 39 Floods 2015. © Jonathan.....	228

Figure 40. 1. Set up Screen shot.....	229
Figure 41. Choosing a Photo	229
Figure 42. Design issues 1.....	230
Figure 43. Design issues 2.....	230
Figure 44 Almost done.....	231
Figure 45. Finished for now.....	231
Figure 46 My message left in the letter box.....	240
Figure 47 The view from Julie’s window.....	240
Figure 48 A completed the feedback form attached to participant’s door.....	240
Figure 49 Up and running again © Jonathan.....	242
Figure 50. Kayleigh and volunteers help to organise the cleaning products.....	245
Figure 51.Jonathan puts up a temporary noticeboard.....	246
Figure 52 Children use sticks to make a wooden fire/hut near Red Tower.....	246
Figure 53 Entrance path to Red Tower after a snow shower in March.....	249
Figure 54. Community notice board in Rosemary Place.....	249
Figure 55 Jess and Doug stood watching the discussion between the horseshoe wall.....	254
Figure 56 Attendees of the Red Tower workshop.....	256
Figure 57. Priya sets out the options for different organisational structures.....	256
Figure 58 Images and feedback results from the Consultation Report stuck to wall.....	257
Figure 59 Core group of volunteers meeting to discuss further the sketches	260
Figure 60 Sketch by Sarah indicating best practices towards defining a logo.....	261
Figure 61. Linda and Matt sit on the horseshoe wall one day, talking to Martha.....	267
Figure 62. Doug smokes a cigarette outside.....	268
Figure 63 Isabel shows me the view from her window; tourists often get lost in the area. ...	271
Figure 64 Logo launch: step towards formalising the group’s identity COPYRIGHT TASH	273
Figure 65. I’d put 50 of the posters up ahead a week of the BBQ.	273
Figure 66 Doug helps Jonathan and a new volunteer erect the gazebo for the BBQ.....	275
Figure 67. Local involvement as the project evolves © Lilac.....	276
Figure 68 Meeting Tim from up the road to discuss the new Residents’ Association.....	276

Figure 69 Consultation board at Resident’s BBQ.....	277
Figure 70 Locality Conference 2016 Nov –© Tash.....	281
Figure 71 Formation of the CIC was a real step change © Tash.....	282
Figure 72. Partnership created with Sealed Knot © Jonathan.....	282
Figure 73. Red Tower Donation Box. © Jonathan	283
Figure 74 Art exhibition by students: a great use of the space © Tash.....	283
Figure 75 Access for utilities inside tower. © Jonathan.	284
Figure 76. Gap in the wall created © Jonathan..	285
Figure 77. Regular pay as you feel café – August 2017 Facebook. © Lilac	286
Figure 78. Kenny Brown’s model of upgrade. © Jonathan.	287
Figure 79. Heritage Open Day 2017: a fab finale before development! © Tash	288
Figure 80. Flourishing growing beds © Tash	288
Figure 81. TOP TEN Theme Coding (WORD %) from all fieldnotes across the phases	291
Figure 82. TOP ten interactions with people & organisations across phases.....	293
Figure 83. Top Ten Theme Coding in Red Tower Supporter Interviews	296
Figure 84. Top Ten Themes Coding in Resident Interviews	298
Figure 85. Theme coding for Red Tower Supporter Group Interview.....	300
Figure 86. Theme coding for Wallwalker Group Interview.....	301
Figure 87. TOP TEN Theme Coding from all Photographs Across Phases	302
Figure 88. Postcard and post-it feedback collection method	304

APPENDIX A.

A.i. The Collaborative Doctoral Award (CDA) Brief & Proposal Funding for three PhD Students

Posted on 19 June 2013 (<https://www.york.ac.uk/archaeology/news-and-events/news/external/news2013/phd-funding-within-the-walls/>).

Applications are invited for three AHRC CDA studentships commencing October 2013 on 'Within the Walls': Heritage Values and the Historic City

Two of these awards will be based in the Department of Archaeology (supervised by Dr John Schofield), and the third in the Department of History (supervised by Dr Sarah Rees Jones). The projects are in partnership with City of York Council.

Using York's unique position as a 'heritage laboratory', the three closely related projects will together make a critical assessment of contemporary heritage values as they relate to (1) the built environment and (2) the buried archaeological resource (both based in Archaeology) and (3) the archive (in History), in relation to national and international criteria on the one hand, and community-led views and values on the other. They will explore the complex relations that exist between heritage and community, and how these can be better aligned to serve contemporary society. As heritage becomes less expert-led, and more community driven, this critical assessment is timely as is realignment of the way heritage values are construed and applied in practice.

Each award pays fees and an annual maintenance grant (currently £13,726 per year), with City of York Council contributing £2000 pa to project costs, including student research expenses. The usual AHRC eligibility rules apply to these studentships, including having an appropriate masters degree by October 2013 and AHRC's residential requirements.

Applications should be made online (<http://www.york.ac.uk/study/postgraduate/apply/#tab-2>) and will comprise: an application form incorporating a Personal Statement (which should specify which of the three PhD projects you are interested in, and a statement of how your research interests and experiences to date will contribute to the success of the project); a CV; two references; and two pieces of written work. The closing date is 19th July 2013. Interviews will be held in mid August

2013. Informal inquiries should be made to Dr John Schofield (john.schofield@york.ac.uk) or to Dr Sarah Rees Jones (sara.reesjones@york.ac.uk).

FURTHER INFORMATION

While the specific details of each project will be discussed with the successful candidates on the commencement of their research, the following parameters have been established:

Traditionally expert-led, the management and administrative frameworks evident across the heritage sector are increasingly hard to sustain, given a growing emphasis on localism, and on participatory and inclusive social practice. This project comprises three separate but linked PhD research topics which overlap in this key strategic policy area, and aim to create new methodologies for future and socially engaged heritage practice. York provides an ideal 'heritage laboratory' in which to test ideas and shape practice. The aims and objectives of the three studies are:

i A critical engagement with the UNESCO concept of Outstanding Universal Value (OUV), using York and other comparable historic cities as a case study. Research questions include: an assessment of the relevance of OUV in an increasingly plural and culturally diverse society. Has World Heritage had its day? How relevant is World Heritage to the communities who 'own' and live with it?

ii A York-specific study which aims to critically assess the range of heritage values alongside the expert-led management practices which they seek to inform. Particular consideration will be given to the relative weighting attached to economic and historical/evidential values alongside social values as they relate to both the built environment and below-ground deposits. Sites across York are designated and afforded statutory protection on the basis of their 'national importance' but how do such national judgements relate to locally held views of everyday sites and places? How can local 'heritage communities' participate more actively in and inform heritage practice? This study will identify key stakeholder groups including marginalised (inc Traveller and Homeless) communities.

iii A critical engagement with the historic archives of the City of York. This project will be informed and shaped by national strategic priorities for archives which emphasise partnership, sustainability, and the critical development of access to archival resources (both analogue and digital). Questions concern the value of the archive to local communities and its role in supporting tourism, community cohesion, education and learning, adult health and wellbeing and the young peoples' agenda.

AHRCArts & Humanities
Research CouncilPolaris House, North Star Avenue,
Swindon, Wiltshire, United Kingdom
SN2 1FLTelephone +44 (0) 1793 416000 Web <http://www.ahrc.ac.uk/>**COMPLIANCE WITH THE DATA PROTECTION ACT 1998**

In accordance with the Data Protection Act 1998, the personal data provided on this form will be processed by AHRC, and may be held on computerised database and/or manual files. Further details may be found in the **guidance notes**

Collaborative Doctoral Awards

Collaborative Doctoral Awards Open Call

14 Feb 2013

PROPOSAL

Document Status: With Owner

AHRC Reference:

Your Reference Number: Walls

ApplicantName: **Research Organisation**

Organisation: University of York
 Department: Archaeology
 College:

Project Partners

Organisation:	City of York Council Libraries and Heritage The Guildhall York UNITED KINGDOM YO1 9QN
✓ Has a formal collaboration agreement been signed by all parties involved ?:	
✓ Is main Project Partner ?: (One required)	

Description of work to be carried out, including the nature and frequency of contact with the project partner. Please refer to Help for council/scheme specific guidance for this question. (mandatory, maximum 8000 characters)

1. Summary

Understanding how society values its past is vital to the management of future change in the built environment. An extensive literature exists on the criteria by which judgements about heritage significance are made, and on which developments can turn. However recent social and political changes have rendered much of this literature increasingly obsolete. For now we have moved into the era of 'heritage communities' (defined in the 2005 Council of Europe's Faro Convention on the Value of Heritage for Society, and closely allied in the UK with the concept of 'amenity societies'), 'people who value specific aspects of cultural heritage', aspects which typically comprise everyday places that rarely meet nationally or internationally recognised criteria of significance. By closely examining York's diverse heritage communities, alongside initiatives such as 'Local Listing' and concepts such as national importance and Outstanding Universal Value (UNESCO), this project will explore the various tensions that now commonly separate these locally and (inter)nationally-held views. York provides a near perfect context for examining this tension, given the intricate web of heritage communities and organisations that exist in and operate from the city, the number of designated 'nationally important' and iconic buildings and monuments, the extensive archive, and a recent bid for World Heritage status. The partnership of a world-leading university, an active and socially-engaged council, and a diverse 'heritage community' create a unique opportunity to explore in depth the complexities through which people engage with place and landscape.

2. University of York and CYC

This project will see staff at City of York Council (CYC) and the University of York (departments of Archaeology and History, and the Borthwick Institute for Archives) collaborate on three separate but closely related studies. Good relations exist already between the University and CYC. Council staff routinely attend heritage and archaeology seminars and events in the Archaeology Department, while students on the Cultural Heritage Management (CHM) MA, the MSc in Digital Heritage and the Public History MA in History are offered work placements with CYC. Dialogue on the challenges facing heritage management in York - a tourist city, but a vibrant and changing city - is ongoing. Within York the departments of Archaeology and History have invested heavily in building relations with the wider heritage community. Conservation Studies, Local History and History as Heritage have been taught here for 40 years, and CHM for 15 while a new MA in Public History launched in 2012. In the Public History and CHM MA programmes, a new generation of students are learning about the importance of intangible heritage, the ethics of history and constructed narratives about the past, some with a focus on the built environment (CHM, Conservation) and some (Public History) with an interest in archives, new and old media and living histories. Some of these excellent students will be seeking to apply for PhD study and a CDA award with CYC would be an excellent opportunity to embed that programme and those skills outside the Academy with a range of beneficiaries among the general public as well as CYC. These are leading courses whose alumni now populate (or will populate) swathes of the heritage sector. Two recent CDAs, one group of three with the York Archaeological Trust led by Rees Jones (History), (2008-present) and a recently awarded CDA with the Council for British Archaeology led by Schofield (Archaeology), (2011-2014) are developing strong connections between these organisations for the overall benefit of the sector and the students who seek to enter it. This proposed CDA will also have significant impact on the wider heritage community, a definition so broad as to include potentially all sectors of society.

3. Input to the Project

CYC is committed to supporting the students' research through use of facilities, and is committed to the monetary and in-kind payments outlined in order to support them. CYC will also meet reasonable travel costs, to be agreed once the project is approved. CYC staff will provide support and assistance for the duration of the study period. While working with CYC, the student will be based in the CYC offices at West Offices in the heart of the City of York where the full range of IT and other office services will be made available. West Offices has state-of-the-art office and meeting facilities to support its staff and their work. The students will be placed within the Design Conservation and Sustainable Development (DCSD) team at West Offices and the City Archives at York Explore. There is considerable practical and academic experience within the DCSD Team and the City Archives. The project will be co-supervised by John Oxley, City Archaeologist, Janine Riley, Conservation Architect, Richard Taylor, Archives & Local History Development Manager, and Victoria Holt, City Archivist.

4. Specific benefits to the students

Whilst at CYC the students will work within two broad areas: heritage and conservation issues within DCSD, and Archive Management within the City Archives. Within DCSD, the students will take part in the day-to-day work of the Group as well as being asked to undertake specific project work that will relate directly to the areas of research. Working with CYC and registration with two leading and successful departments at a Russell Group University will bring significant benefits to the students. Additional to the benefits of UoY registration (teaching and other development opportunities; working within a vibrant postgraduate community and in dedicated workspace; exposure to and participation in conferences, symposia etc, and international context) the students will benefit from work placement with CYC. Two of the students will spend time within a busy planning environment where a daily challenge is balancing sustainable heritage protection with the management of necessary change within the urban fabric. Students will engage directly with casework, strategy/policy formulation and public engagement. Students will not only witness but participate in the planning process, in heritage valuation, balancing the abstract with the practical in a highly contested heritage environment. The students will gain invaluable experience of working directly on the management of the historic environment of the city within an experienced and expert team. The students working in DCSD will be trained in the use of the CYC HER and ARCVIEW GIS. The students will also be involved in the day-to-day work (processing, analysis and negotiations) that arises in a busy development management team dealing with development in York. The skills and experience developed in this work will be valuable and transferable to other public authorities and private sector consultancies. CYC is developing outreach and education programmes linked to both the CYC HER and the City Archives. The student will therefore see the direct link between their research and its impact on the public understanding of the past.

The students will benefit from working with one of the most important local government archives in the UK. This has recently been recognised in the award of major funding from the National Council of Archives and the HLF to create the first ever full catalogue of the collections and to build a new archive store and reading rooms. Its collections contain the archives of civic government and related organisations over the last 800 years and cover every aspect of the city's history and development from community matters (such as education, employment and healthcare) to essential sources for studying the city's built environment (including over 12000 maps and drawings from the city engineers' department over the 19th and 20th centuries).

Funding:

Total contribution in cash to Department:	
Total contribution in kind to Department:	
Total contribution in cash to Student:	

Total contribution in kind to Student:	
--	--

Description of contribution: (mandatory, maximum 4000 characters)

x

Please describe the nature of the non-academic organisation's work including any current research interest relating to the arts and humanities. If the organisation is based outside of the UK please explain the basis for setting up the collaboration and how the benefits of the research will accrue to the UK: (mandatory, maximum 4000 characters)

City of York Council (CYC) is a Unitary Authority established in 1996. Independent civic governance in York can be traced back to 1212 and the charter granted by King John. Today the City of York Local Authority area covers approximately 105 square miles (272 square kilometers). The City of York currently has a population of around 194,900 people, with the majority of the population (around 140,000 people) residing in the urban area. CYC has adopted a Council Plan that sets out five priorities for four years until 2015: Create jobs and grow the economy; Get York moving; Build strong communities; Protect vulnerable people; and Protect the environment.

York has an outstanding built and natural environment, with world class heritage and a wide variety of cultural opportunities. The historic environment of the City of York is of international, national, regional and local significances. This is recognised through the existing national statutory designations that apply to heritage assets in the City of York. These significances are also evidenced at the international level through the formal bid by CYC to be placed on the new UK Tentative List of World Heritage Sites and at the local level through the community-driven desire to adopt a List of Locally Significant buildings, structures and spaces.

CYC is responsible for carrying out all statutory and non-statutory roles and responsibilities that lie within the competence of all strategic planning and development management within the local authority area. Stewardship of the historic environment forms a critical part of these responsibilities. The historic environment can be characterised and its significances recognised in a number of different ways. There are 1581 Listed buildings; 22 Scheduled Ancient Monuments; 35 Conservation Areas; 4 Registered Parks and Gardens; and 7 separate statutory Areas of Archaeological Importance. A city-wide Historic Characterisation Appraisal is currently being produced.

CYC has a well-developed digital Historic Environment Record. The City archives represent the best record outside London of continuing civic administration from the 12th century to the present day.

This collaborative project has evolved from previous less formal arrangements. Having realised the potential for research collaboration (through liaison between OXLEY and SCHOFIELD [Archaeology] and TAYLOR and REES-JONES [History]), and through common research interests related to policy needs and strategy, the concept of a CDA application was developed. Although the failed World Heritage bid for York was a catalyst for some of these conversations, and though Outstanding Universal Value is one of the project's research themes, its aims and implications extend beyond world heritage, and beyond York, to the entire heritage sector. Because of the unique combination of personnel [SCHOFIELD having spent 21 years within the heritage sector, with English Heritage; OXLEY has been the city archaeologist since 1989, TAYLOR has over 30 years experience in managing and developing both commercial and public sector archive services], the rich and diverse heritage resources, a diverse set of local 'heritage communities' (after Faro 2005), and a University well versed on socially relevant cultural research, York is ideally placed to deliver this significant and wide-reaching research project.

Project Partner Contact:

Contact:	Mr John Oxley
Organisation	
Department	

Project Details

Are you applying for an Extended Programme?

No

(mandatory):

Project title (mandatory):

Number of Studentships Requested

3

Project Summary

The three proposed PhDs - which will run concurrently to gain the maximum benefit from collaboration and partnership (and alongside current PhD students studying comparable themes) - have a common focus on heritage values. Traditionally expert-led, the management and administrative frameworks evident across the heritage sector are becoming increasingly hard to sustain, given the growing emphasis on localism, and participatory and inclusive social practice. The three studies overlap in this key strategic policy area, and aim to create new methodologies for future and socially engaged heritage practice. York provides an ideal laboratory in which to test ideas and shape practice, given its rich and diverse heritage, and diversity of heritage communities within the city, and the number of heritage bodies working here. The three studies will comprise:

1. A critical engagement with the UNESCO concept of Outstanding Universal Value, using York and other comparable historic cities (walled historic cities with complex buried deposits - Bergen and Novgorod, for example) as a case study. A specific question - as the concept of World Heritage passes its fortieth year - is how relevant this concept remains in an increasingly plural and culturally diverse society. Has World Heritage had its day? How relevant is World Heritage to the communities who 'own' and live with it? (Supervisors: John Schofield, John Oxley). This strand is abbreviated throughout as LOCAL/GLOBAL (L/G).
2. A York-specific study which critically assesses the range of heritage values alongside the expert-led management practices which they seek to inform. Particular consideration will be given to the relative weighting attached to economic and historical/evidential values alongside social values as they relate to both the built environment and below-ground deposits. Sites across York are designated and afforded statutory protection on the basis of their 'national importance' but how do such national judgements relate to locally held views of everyday sites and places? How can local 'heritage communities' participate more actively in and inform heritage practice? This study will identify key stakeholder groups including marginalised (inc Traveller and Homeless) communities (Supervisors: John Schofield, John Oxley). This strand is abbreviated as SOCIAL VALUE (SV).
3. A critical engagement with the historic archives of the City of York Council, and the cultural values associated with documents which tell the story of a place's history. This project will be both informed and shaped by national strategic priorities for archives which emphasise partnership, sustainability, and the critical development of digital access to archival resources (both analogue and digital), and that have identified key roles for archives locally in supporting tourism, community cohesion, education and learning, adult health and wellbeing and the young peoples' agenda. The City of York Archives contain millions of untold stories about people, places and events. They include magical resources which can touch people's hearts and illuminate our understanding of many issues, but there are multiple cultural, institutional and educational barriers to widening public participation. In particular although there are many models of public engagement we are still in the early stages of developing robust policies and practices that will support the sustainable co-production of new knowledge and understanding between professionals and the wider public. This PhD programme will focus on this issue of developing methodologies and best practices for sustainable broad public participation in local archives through a series of well-chosen case studies using the resources and experience of the City of York Archives with a range of user groups with varying aptitudes and experiences. (Supervisors: Sarah Rees Jones, Richard Taylor). This strand is abbreviated as ARCHIVE (ARCH).

IPR and Ethical Information

Give details of arrangements agreed to maintain confidentiality of information, consider the ethical issues and IPR between all partners. Please refer to help for guidance.

The project will operate according to the ethics policy of the University of York, which can be found at: <http://www.york.ac.uk/staff/research/governance/policies/ethics-code/>. The Department of Archaeology Ethics Committee, which operates under the oversight of the Humanities and Social Sciences Ethics Committee (Chair Prof John Local), will be contacted in the first instance.

In the unlikely event that issues relating to Data Protection legislation arise, these will be considered in the light of University policy (<http://www.york.ac.uk/recordsmanagement/dpa/>) & the Data Protection office will be contacted (Dr Charles Fonge, Borthwick Institute, charles.fonge@york.ac.uk).

It will also operate under a formal partnership agreement, modelled on a standard partnership agreement used by previous UoY CDA partners (e.g. YAT, CBA) for internships and bursary placements, which covers issues of relative rights, obligations and responsibilities of all partners, supervision arrangements, issues of confidentiality, intellectual property, respective rights for publication and the arrangements for payments made by the City of York Council as part of the studentships.

Each organisation will respect the confidentiality of any restricted information that the other organisation brings to the project, including its background intellectual property. Where personal information is used in the project, each organisation will fully abide by the obligations of the Data Protection Act.

All project information will be exchanged between the participants on a confidential basis until it is agreed that it is ready to be published, and any intellectual property created in the course of the project that may be subject to commercial protection will be kept confidential until protection has been sought. Finally, the City of York Council is experienced in dealing with sensitive data. They have well-established policy (see http://www.york.gov.uk/content/finance/31623/31616/Data_protection_act/DataProtectionPolicy.pdf), and are thus well-prepared and situated to cope with any potential ethical, confidentiality or property-right concerns.

How will you ensure that the student is made aware of any confidentiality or ethical issues and who will be responsible for agreeing procedures ?

The students will be provided with a copy of this application. At the start of the studentships the students will be expected to be present at a meeting where the formal partnership agreement is presented, and to be a signatory to it, along with the departments of Archaeology and History, and CYC.

As part of their induction with the departments of Archaeology and History, and City of York Council, the students will receive training and background in the use of confidential information. Thereafter, IPR and Ethics will be monitored at the six-monthly Thesis Advisory Panel (TAP) review meetings, ensuring that the terms of the formal agreement are being adhered to.

Academic Beneficiaries

Describe who will benefit from the research [up to 4000 chars].

1. A new and original contribution

The three integrated studies which make up this project will make a new and highly original contribution to heritage discourse. In spite of recognising that heritage is for everyone, that it is a 'shared resource', and that 'everyone should be able to participate in decisions about the future of the historic environment' (English Heritage's Conservation Principles 2008, p.20), heritage is still governed, managed and presented as if it were only iconic sites and places which matter. This project will challenge these presumptions through three related and interwoven strands of research, each with a focus on the same place: York, using the city as a 'heritage laboratory'. Examining this contradiction between the iconic and the everyday from the perspectives of (1) the concept of Outstanding Universal Value (a prerequisite of all World Heritage nominations); (2) locally held views and values of the built environment; and (3) the cultural significance of the archive, a detailed and critical examination will be made of some of the very foundations of heritage practice, practice which is increasingly coming under close scrutiny. This level and depth of enquiry, examining a well-documented heritage city from diverse but complementary perspectives, is unprecedented. It is likely that the publication of this project, in leading peer-reviewed journals, will contribute to a reshaping of some aspects of heritage practice.

2. Intellectual benefits of the partnership

This innovative partnership between two successful departments at UoY and CYC, provides an ideal opportunity to explore these research questions, questions which are topical and timely (in the context of localism for example, and the idea of 'acting local, thinking global'). CYC provides access to a significant archive of documentation relating to the city's heritage over time, including the recent bid to secure World Heritage status, and public approaches to, and participation in, planning. The city also hosts archives relating to the historic environment. CYC staff associated with this project have considerable experience of archives and heritage experience in the city. This partnership will expose all of the students to these resources and the expertise that accompanies them. The three-year study period allows the students to track changes in attitude and approach over time, in real time.

The timeliness of the project is further underpinned by current developments both nationally and locally in the debate about the public value of cultural heritage. Locally these are evidenced through the award of funding in 2012-2013 to rebuild the City Archives and create a new digital catalogue of its collections, by the foundation and development within the University of new graduate programmes in public history, cultural memory and heritage management, and by the relocation of the City of York Council offices and internal reorganisation of its departments creating new heritage opportunities in relation to historic collections and historic sites of government within the city.

3. Benefits to others

The approaches developed here can contribute to a reshaping of heritage practice, while the outputs will articulate the views of York's diverse heritage communities. The 'Heritage & Homelessness' project, a current UoY PhD study, has shown how empowering heritage participation can be; how it can contribute to the wellbeing of respondents. Such projects are about place, but they are also about people, and how people can engage more fully in heritage discourse, on matters of local interest and, by extension, global significance. This project feeds into the localism agenda, and is closely aligned with the social benefits of promoting democratic, participatory approaches to what has often in the past been expert-led practice.

Impact Summary

Impact Summary (please refer to the help for guidance on what to consider when completing this section) [up to 4000 chars]

GENERAL

The UoY has a significant track record in developing and assessing public engagement strategies. Current PhD research in the Department of Archaeology includes studies of Local Lists, public benefit through the new National Planning Policy Framework, and heritage interests amongst homeless communities. The Borthwick Institute for Archives (one of the largest regional archives in the UK) has developed public access to historic archives for over 50 years, most recently through a number of major digitisation projects funded by the Andrew Mellon Foundation and others. Major funded research projects in History have also supported the digitisation of a major record series in the National Archives including a current project on England's Immigrants led by Professor Ormrod, while Rees Jones is leading a project developing new interfaces to support public engagement with records relating to local histories (www.chartEx.org). The UoY also has expertise in working with local councils to manage the heritage environment. In York, the Department together with Ove Arup and Partners and Bernard Thorpe produced the internationally influential 'York Development and Archaeology Study' for CYC and English Heritage. This project will build on this earlier and ongoing research to integrate the changing face of heritage, its values and its future. Through this project, with its strong emphasis on public engagement, a new way of thinking about heritage values will begin to emerge.

SPECIFIC BENEFICIARIES

1. Local 'Heritage Communities': Heritage and society are interdependent. Society needs heritage, but people also like their heritage and increasingly want to engage with it - it contributes to wellbeing and brings significant economic benefit, especially in cities like York. However, the current systems by which heritage is valued and managed take little account of this local public support. Throughout this project the students will promote and assess the benefits of public enjoyment of and participation in heritage: through public consultations, workshops and other events which the students will arrange and facilitate. These activities will challenge the traditional 'top-down' 'expert-led' approach, that is increasingly hard to sustain. [SV, ARCH]
2. Visit York, and York tourism: Heritage brings major economic benefit to York, as it does to many cities, but the connection between heritage for tourists and heritage for locals is rarely assessed from a critical or strategic viewpoint. It is argued here that knowledge of the value of heritage within local communities can be used to enhance tourism; to generate new attractions, widen and diversify participation in heritage and cultural tourism, and benefit the quality of the tourist experience. [SV, L/G, ARCH]
3. Planning Policies and CYC: By conducting this research, and through dissemination of research outcomes, this project will contribute to local, national and international strategic agenda and good practice on understanding, managing ('stewarding'), preserving and interpreting cultural heritage. This research is likely to influence planning policy and practice at local and (inter)national levels. Conducting this research within York's 'heritage laboratory' will promote new approaches to managing heritage and community in a 21st-century urban environment where the resources valued by 'expert' and non-expert stakeholders are very different. UNESCO (and ICOMOS) will be specific beneficiaries, through research into the contemporary relevance of OUV. [SV, L/G, ARCH]
4. The cultural heritage itself will benefit, through a realignment of what constitutes the city's heritage, and through promotion of a more participatory and interdisciplinary approach to its management. Building on the success of institutions which have integrated public access to archives into their material collections (NRM) the project will promote the visibility and benefit of collaboration. [SV, L/G, ARCH]

Supervisors

Please specify the supervisors and their supervision details.

Research Organisation	Supervisor	Main Supervisor?
University of York	Dr John Schofield	Yes

Research experience:

John Schofield has long had involvement with the heritage sector, as an employee and researcher. Following his PhD at Southampton (1989), John worked for England's national heritage agency (English Heritage - EH) for twenty-one years, working as an Inspector and Team Leader in its then flagship Monuments Protection Programme, and later the Characterisation Team. This period, and the change of jobs, saw a transition in his thinking from one that viewed heritage only as 'national' and iconic, to one that focused on the everyday; and realisation that what most people value is the mundane and the everyday created the inspiration for research which has been ongoing now for ten years. John's is a leading voice and advocate for minority and everyday views of heritage and landscape, alongside the need to retain and preserve our iconic sites and monuments.

At the University of York, this research includes a specific focus on the implications of the 2005 Faro Convention on the Value of Heritage for Society, and the relationship between the view that everyone has the right to participate in heritage activity and decision-making, and the terms of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights. Recent writings and conference presentations have explored ethical dimensions of this inclusive (bottom-up, inter-disciplinary) approach to heritage, promoting methodologies that encourage minority views, and challenging the authorised view. In a city where everyone has a view, where we are surrounded by 'heritage' and shape and create it every day, and which has recently applied for World Heritage status, this research proposal can build on earlier work to make a significant new contribution to contemporary heritage practice.

Relevant recent publications include:

In press (ed) *Who needs experts? Counter-mapping cultural heritage*. London: Ashgate.

In press (with Emily Morrissey) *Malta's Living Heritage: Strait Street, Valletta - Culture, Heritage & Landscape*. Malta: Midsea Books.

2012 *A dirtier reality? Archaeological methods and the urban project*. In Graves-Brown, P, Harrison R. and Piccini, A.A. (eds), *The Oxford Handbook of Historical Archaeology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

2012 (with Rachael Kiddey and Brett Lashua) *People and landscape*. In Carman, J., McDavid, C. and Skeates, R. (eds), *The Oxford Handbook of Public Archaeology*, 296-318. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

2011 (with John Carman and Paul Belford) *The Heritage Handbook: Heritage Management Practices in the British Isles*. New York: Springer.

2011 (with Rachael Kiddey) *Embrace the margins: adventures in archaeology and homelessness*. *Public Archaeology* 10.1, 4-22.

2011 (ed, with Rosy Phillipson) *Sense of place: Local heritage in global context*. London: Ashgate.

2010 (with Brett Lashua and Sara Cohen) *Introduction to the special issue: music, characterization and urban space*. *Popular Music History* 4.2, 105-110.

2010 (with Brett Lashua and Sara Cohen) *Popular music, mapping and the characterization of Liverpool*. *Popular Music History* 4.2, 126-44. 2009 *Being autocentric: Towards symmetry in heritage management practices*. In Gibson, L. and Pendelbury, J. (eds), *Valuing Historic Environments*, pp. 93-114. London: Ashgate.

2008 (ed, with Graham Fairclough, Rodney Harrison and John H Jameson Jnr) *The Heritage Reader*. London: Routledge.

Existing students and projects:

In his two years at the University of York (2010-13), Schofield has developed a small team of PhD students, working in areas of contemporary heritage practice and theory. He currently supervises four PhD students, of which the three most cognate are:

Rob Lennox (PhD, full-time started 2011: AHRC CDA - Planning for the Historic Environment: Transitions in Cultural Heritage Policy

Stella Jackson (PhD, part-time started 2008) - A Review of Heritage Protection Reform in England: Why it is Needed and Who it Will Serve

Rachael Kiddey (PhD, full-time started 2010) - Homelessness: Archaeology and Heritage at the Margins of Society

Staff time is modelled within the Department to ensure adequate time is available to balance teaching, supervision, research and administrative duties. This ensures no-one is overloaded over their portfolio. This model would be adjusted to accommodate any additional studentships.

Submission rate:

In the past five years Schofield worked for English Heritage (to July 2010) and now UoY (from July 2010). None of his current students have submitted although all are on course for on time submission. While at EH he supervised two PhD students at UCL (Moshenska and Orange), both of whom completed on time.

Research Organisation	Supervisor	Main Supervisor?
University of York	Dr Sarah Ruth Rees Jones	No

Research experience:

As Director of the Institute for the Public Understanding of the Past at York (2013-) I am engaged with a range of heritage practitioners both regionally and nationally in developing public history projects. The original focus of my research was using archival evidence towards the study of the social, communal and topographical development of medieval cities, particularly York. Over many years I developed this in partnership with the York Archaeological Trust, most recently through a focus on the study of poverty in relation to their excavations of modern era slums at Hungate 2008-12. This work reached over 18,000 members of the public from a wide cross-section of backgrounds. It included the training of three PhD students on AHRC CDAs, and the appointment of a community historian by YAT.

Through the new MA in Public History I am now embarking on new projects in public history with the City of York Council, the National Railway Museum, York Minster and the York Museums' Trust among others. Since 2010 I have also worked on 'traumatic histories' with the Jewish Historical Society of England focussed around the issue of the massacre of the Jewish community of York in 1190 and modern reception and treatments of that history. I am also PI on the project ChartEx (www.chartex.org, total budget c. £420,000) which is employing artificial intelligence in the design of new tools that will improve the accessibility and usefulness of digital archival data for public historical research into places, people and events. ChartEx is funded through the international Digging into Data Challenge and is a large consortium of 16 research staff in six Universities in four nations working in partnership with The National Archives. These public history projects are designed to support co-production and not to be merely didactic.

My public history work has thus led me to think broadly about the role of history and archives in society and the possibility of developing new technologies to enhance public engagement and the co-production of new knowledge and understanding. I have been a strong supporter of the City of York's campaign to save the city's unique and immensely important archives, to win funding for the creation of a digital catalogue (the first catalogue for over a century) and to win HLF funding for the construction of a new archive store and refurbished reading rooms. I am regularly engaged in the City Archives' public engagement activities giving public talks but also providing behind-the-scenes support to their initiatives including York 800, York Stories 2012 and advising on co-produced exhibitions.

Selected Publications

S. Rees Jones, *York, the Making of a City, 1068 - 1350* (OUP, 2013, in press, publication October 2013)

S. Rees Jones, Peter Connelly, Kate Giles, Jayne Rimmer and John Walker (eds), *International Journal of Historical Archaeology*, 15/4 (December 2011), Special Collection. *Poverty in Depth, New International Perspectives*, including co-authored article 'Poverty in Depth: New International Perspectives', pp. 544-552

S. Rees Jones and S. Watson (eds). *Christians and Jews in Angevin England: The York Massacre of 1190, Narratives and Contexts* (Boydell and Brewer, in press, April 2013), including authored chapter 'Neighbours and Victims in Twelfth-Century York: a Royal Citadel, the Citizens and the Jews of York', pp. 15-42.

ChartEx Project: www.chartex.org

Existing students and projects:

Since 1995 I have supervised 14 successful PhD students in History and Medieval Studies, including seven funded by AHRC and one partially funded by SSHRC. I co-supervise two Eng Ds in Computer Science who are sponsored by The National Archives and the Ordnance Survey GB. I have examined 24 PhD candidates in 5 universities.

I currently supervise 6 PhD candidates. The three most relevant are

Lisa Liddy, 'Possessions: Circulation, Consumption and Choice. An interdisciplinary study of the affective and economic relationships suggested by household possessions in York, 1400-1600'. An AHRC CDA with the York Archaeological Trust, part-time (2008-)

Jo Pugh (TNA), 'Archives and audiences: interacting with records in the virtual space', Computer Science LSCItS Eng. D.

Jessica Knowles, 'People and Affect in a medieval parish: an interdisciplinary study', supported by the parish of All Saints, North Street, York and a teaching scholarship (2011-)

Submission rate:

1) 100%

Bethany Hamblen (o/s) PhD 2004-8 . Social networks in the rural hinterland of York c. 1350-1500.

Catherine Casson, PhD 2005-2009 (self-funded). Forgery: the administration of weights and measures in selected English towns (London, Norwich, Great Yarmouth) 1250-1400. In April 2009 Catherine won the Economic History Society's New Researcher Prize.

Jayne Rimmer (AHRC funded) completed PhD 2004-8. 'The construction and use of small houses in later medieval York and Norwich, an interdisciplinary study'.

2) 0

3) 0

Supervision Details

What are the supervisory arrangements and where there is more than one supervisor, please state how the supervision duties will be shared. If the main supervisor leaves or is unable to continue, please outline how the student would be supported.

Of the three PhD projects, Schofield will be the lead academic supervisor in two, supported by Oxley as non-academic supervisor. In the third project, Rees-Jones will be the lead academic supervisor and Richard Taylor the non-academic. In all cases the PhD student and supervisor will be supported by a Thesis Advisory Panel (TAP), comprising another two academic members of staff, one of which will have some relevant research interest. The third TAP member will be an independent chair. In History the Chair is likely to be chosen from the research staff of the Borthwick Institute for Archives. In Archaeology the same Chair is likely to cover both projects. The TAP will meet twice a year (March and October) if the students are full time, and once if part time. TAPs are common to all students at York and are designed to monitor the direction of students' work. By presenting research to a group rather than to a single academic, students are encouraged to focus on the overall programme and its explication; problems are more easily noticed and their resolution benefits from wider experience. The TAP also advises on and monitors the students' participation in research and transferrable skills training. Most TAPs will involve the submission of a significant piece of written work (usually a chapter), while one meeting is used to confirm progression to PhD. Beyond the TAP, The academic supervisor will meet with the student(s) once a

month for a progress meeting. If the main supervisor should leave, in both Archaeology and History there is cover available through staff members with relevant research interest, one of whom will sit on each TAP. It is likely that this person would assume supervisory responsibilities, thus ensuring continuity.

The Project as a whole will also be overseen by an informally constituted steering group comprising the supervisors (academic and non academic) alongside representatives of relevant heritage bodies such as York Archaeological Trust, ICOMOS UK, Civic Voice and the Civic Trust. Of these, YAT have had previous involvement with CDAs. Within CYC the students will be supervised on a day-to-day basis by John Oxley (City Archaeologist) and Richard Taylor. They will undertake regular reviews of progress with the students and these will be reported by email and in meetings to the academic supervisor. Richard Taylor (BA MArAd) is Archives & Local History Development Manager at City of York Council. He has delivered strategic archival management projects in both public and private sectors including: Independent Television Association; Kings College London; London Transport; Railtrack PLC and the National Railway Museum (NRM). At NRM he led the £2.8m HLF/HEFCE-funded "Search Engine" project. He moved to CoYC to implement his recommendations for restructuring their Archives in 2009.

Proposed Training & Support

Please detail how the student's training needs will be identified, met & monitored throughout the period of his/her award (mandatory, maximum 4000 characters)

The UoY and the Departments of Archaeology and History have developed precise guidelines and provision for the training of doctoral students, which correlate with the Research Councils' Joint Skills Statement on learning outcomes for doctoral programmes. Students are expected to spend a minimum of 30 days during the period of their doctoral registration on appropriate Research and Transferable Skills training and self-reflective personal development. A suite of opportunities is offered by both the University's Graduate Training Unit and by Departmental training programmes and graduate-level academic and skills modules, which are open to doctoral students. Skills training opportunities directly relevant to this project include qualitative methods, GIS and characterisation (for L/G and SV), and documentary research (for ARCH). The Departments will also provide clinics in research skills, such as conference presentation, conference organisation and planning, networking, bidding for funding, publication, peer reviewing, and CV and interview preparation. Centralised training will also be provided in research/teaching skills such as the stages of writing a thesis, oral/written communication, and approaches to delivering seminars and lectures.

The Post-Graduates Who Teach (PGWT) programme will enable the students to gain extensive experience of undergraduate teaching and marking within the two Departments, preparing them for academic or public engagement careers. York also offers doctoral students the opportunity to participate in an accredited training programme entitled Preparing Future Academics (<http://www.york.ac.uk/admin/hr/researcherdevelopment/pfa/>), which introduces teaching techniques, and provides participants with skills in facilitating learning and supporting students.

At the outset, the students will participate in postgraduate induction, which will introduce them to the working environment of the Department. This will be followed by Study Skills clinics, which will be concerned with IT skills, writing, research and time management, and they will also undertake training in academic integrity and making the most of library and e-resources. At the first supervision meeting, supervisors will identify and initiate the training needs. Thereafter, training will be monitored and further training needs identified at regular supervisions and the twice-yearly TAP. A web-based package (The Skills Forge) allows students at York to plan, record, reflect on and produce transcripts of their research and professional development, and Skills Forge reports are viewed regularly by the supervisors at meetings and TAPs. The placement with CYC will commence with a course of induction. The purpose of the induction will be to cover arrangements for supervision, health and safety, and welfare. The students will be covered by CYC insurance during their work with CYC.

Postgraduate students at York also have the benefit of additional training provided by the Humanities Research Centre

(HRC), a new interdisciplinary hub for research in the arts and humanities. The HRC brings together staff and students from across eight arts and humanities departments at York alongside visiting speakers and experts from outside academia. Training courses here will enable the students to hone their skills in writing and in giving presentations, to acquire additional expertise in data management and IT skills, and to attend workshops on funding, publications and career development.

At the City of York Council the students will receive training in the use of the various database and GIS systems used by City of York Council: UNIFORM; HBSMR; ARCMAP. Inductions to working in City of York Council West Offices and Health and Safety Risk Assessments will be provided. CYC will also provide all necessary PPE for site visits. The students will be working alongside and supported by experienced conservation professionals during their time with CYC.

Recruitment and Selection procedures

Detail the student selection, recruitment and induction procedures (mandatory, maximum 4000 characters)

We anticipate a strong field of candidates for this award, given the University's position as one of the world's leading research universities Department of Archaeology's recent award of the Queen's Anniversary Prize (2011), in recognition of its leading role as a centre of excellence and innovation in teaching and research. The City's wealth of research potential is well-established, and there is a large number of excellent (bright, articulate and dedicated) Masters students completing heritage-related programmes at York and elsewhere. Both departments have close and long-standing links with the Council providing an ideal environment for this collaborative awards: Archaeology since working with CoYC on the seminal York Development and Archaeological Study (1991), and History through frequent collaboration with the city museums (now the York Museums Trust) and the City Archives. The Department of History's external management advisory panel is currently chaired by the CEO, City of York Council and includes representatives from a number of heritage organisations.

The studentships will be offered in an open competition and the best students will be selected. The studentships will be advertised through the websites of British Archaeological Jobs and Resources, the Institute for Archaeologists' Jobs Information Service, Heritage Alliance's Update, and www.jobs.ac.uk (Jobs in Research, Science, Academic and Related Professions). They will also be promoted on the City of York Council's own website (http://www.york.gov.uk/jobs/Job_vacancies/). Applications will be reviewed by the University and Council supervisors, and a shortlist drawn up. References will be obtained, and interviews held, with the University and Council supervisors, and chaired by the Department's Higher Degrees Officer.

We intend to ensure that the students appointed are adequately prepared in order to undertake research at doctoral level. The students will be selected on academic achievement, research potential, ability to work in both environments, and their own research interests and experience of the sector. It is expected that doctoral applicants will have completed, or will have completed by the start date of their studentship, a formal Master's level qualification.

The Departments of Archaeology and History run an Induction Programmes for all new postgraduate students during the first week of the Autumn Term. They include: a formal introduction to the Department (from staff), an alternative introduction (from current PhD students), an introduction to doctoral research, a presentation and networking workshop for research students, a tour of campus and libraries, introduction to computing facilities, and introduction to teaching and learning for PGWTs. The students will also receive a general induction at the City of York Council, as provided to newly recruited staff and interns, covering health and safety issues, confidentiality, equal opportunities and environmental policies and working procedures. Students will be introduced by the non-academic supervisor to other Council staff in York and to the internal ICT environment. The non-academic supervisor will ensure the necessary arrangements for the day-to-day programme of the students whilst they are working at the Council offices, and maintain responsibility for their welfare during these periods.

Proposal Classification Research

Research Areas are the subject areas in which the research proposal may fall and you should select at least one of these. Once you have selected the relevant Research Area(s), please ensure that you set one as primary.

Subject Area:	Topic	Keyword
Cultural and museum studies	Heritage Management [Primary]	

Qualifier:

Qualifiers are terms that further describe the area of your research and cover aspects such as approach, time period, and geographical focus. Please ensure you complete this section if relevant.

To add or remove Qualifiers use the links below.

Type	Name
Approach	Knowledge exchange
Collaboration location region	England
Project Engagement by Sector	Academic Users
Project Engagement by Sector	Central and Local Government
Project Engagement by Sector	General Public

Free-text Keywords:

Free-text keywords may be used to describe the subject area of the proposal in more detail. It is particularly important that you provide these where the Research Area(s) you have selected are only defined to two levels.

A.ii Ethnographic Individual Interview Topic Schedule

Table 1. Individual Interview Topic Schedule

Stage	Question	Theory?
<i>Icebreaker:</i>	--"How do we know each other? When did we meet?"	Accounting for multi-local movements of both interviewer and interviewee – drawn from Marcus (1995, 1997).
<i>Accounting for interviewee's relationship to the locality and place-theme through work or other activity related to heritage or place:</i>	--"What you do in York? What is your role?"	Accounting for 'field of expertise' and operative language games – drawn from Wittgenstein (1958) and Bourdieu (1983s).
<i>Accounting for the interviewee's 'value-action' processes within the locality and place-theme:</i>	--"What are your concerns for specific heritage asset or wider place"—York or Red Tower?"	Key word: CONCERN, a 'worry' for the familiar environment – drawn from Heidegger's 'concerned individual' (2001) and Grenville's 'ontological insecurity' (2007).
	--"And intentions for specific heritage asset or place"—York or Red Tower?	Key word: INTENTION, an intended movement of action showing practical reasoning stemming from a desire towards an end goal – drawn from Anscombe (1977) and Aristotle (2009).
	--"And desires/aspirations for specific heritage asset or place"—York or Red Tower?	Key word: DESIRE/ASPRIRATION, a wanting, movement towards something – drawn from Anscombe (1977) and Raban (1976).
<i>Communication and information sharing/media—</i>	--"What forms of communication or information sharing do you use?"	Drawing from discussions in Chapter Two, Heidegger's 'logos' (2001, 56) and the need to be critical of specific types of media in particular contexts (i.e. Miller 2017), considering apathy (Affleck & Kvan 2008, 100) or disagreements (McDavid 2004, 173).

<i>Success of above?</i>	--Is it important? Is it Effective in engaging people? What is effective?	""
	--How to more forward?	""
<i>End comment: heritage definition</i>	What is your definition of heritage? Rap up any take 'away' points, any moving forward propositions.	This question emerged after my first pilot interview, wherein the participant asked me to define heritage. This became my usual way to round off the conversation and allowed participants to agree or disagree with me. It also became, in some cases, a way of determining positive or negative connotations of heritage, and so fed back into the value-action topic-area.

A.iii Ethnographic Group Interview

Table 2. Ethnographic Group Interview Topic Schedule

Stage	Question	Theory?
<i>Icebreaker—</i>	"Please introduce yourself?"	Accounting for multi-local movements –drawn from Marcus (1995, 1997).
	"And your relationship with [place-theme in question]"— West Offices or Red Tower?	Accounting for 'field of expertise' and operative language games – drawn from Wittgenstein (1958) and Bourdieu (1983s).
<i>Communication and information sharing/media—</i>	I go through a list of media currently used by group, identified through fieldwork. I then ask "Is this knowledge legitimate, are there are any additions to make?"	This is part of the collaborative exercise in a group interview, to demonstrate team-work (Lunt & Livingstone 1996, Davies 2001, 105).
	Discuss the success of above in achieving information sharing and other forms of engagement? Is it important? Is it Effective?? What is effective?	Drawing from discussions in Chapter Two, Heidegger's 'logos' (2001, 56) and the need to be critical of specific types of media in particular contexts (i.e. Miller 2017), considering apathy (Affleck & Kvan 2008, 100) or disagreements (McDavid 2004, 173).
	How to more forward?	""

A.iv Consent Sheets

Within the Walls Project

Introducing the research:

I'm Katrina, a researcher at the Department of Archaeology. I am researching the role that heritage can play in local places in York. I am working at the Red Tower as part of my project.

I'm creating a diary of my progress as I work with people connected to the Red Tower, the Walmgate area, or the City of York Council. At the same time, I am trying to communicate in different ways so that different people can be involved in work on heritage.

I've given you this leaflet because I want to include you in my research—as a resident, worker, student or visitor in York. Please read on and let me know if you are happy to be involved. Feel free to chat about this with other people. Taking part will take some time but only as much as you are happy with.

This project is run by the Department Archaeology at the University of York. It is funded by the *City of York Council* and the *Arts and Humanities Research Council*.

What will the research involve?

I'd like to ask you for permission to potentially do three things:



1. Ask your thoughts about the Red Tower using feedback forms:

Using a form I will ask you what you think should happen to the Red Tower. The information asked of you will also include your postcode, your occupation, and whether you want to help at the Red Tower.

You do not have to answer all the questions. You can see the feedback form again afterwards if you wish so please provide an email address or postal address. You may also remove anything if you wish, just let me know.

2. Make diary notes of other events and activities connected to the Red Tower or at the Council

If you are involved in my work for the Council or the Red Tower, or happen to attend an event I would like to write about these activities by note-taking and taking photographs. If you agree, I will write down what is done, by whom and how. If you wish to be left out of my note-taking or photographs, please let me know. I aim to write a narrative of my progress.

You may have access to any notes or photographs at your request and may remove anything from my research collection afterwards: my contact details are below.

3. Interview people who have knowledge about local places.

This should take no more than an hour. I will ask you about your work, things we do together at the Red Tower and York's heritage in general. The interview can happen anywhere and at any time you want. If you agree, the interview will be audio-recorded and written up.

You do not have to answer any questions that you do not want to. If you want to stop the interview this is not a problem. You are welcome to have copies of the interview and will be able to hear it afterwards.

Will the information the researcher collects be kept safe?

I'm in charge of keeping all the information I gather safe. Your thoughts on Red Tower will be shared with the Red Tower Group and then kept anonymous for my research. During my research, all notes, photographs and recordings will be kept digitally secure at the University of York. Afterwards they will be kept at the Archaeological Data Service for 10 years. I will not include any names in the research and your personal details will be kept confidential. This study has received approval from the *University of York, Arts and Humanities Ethics Committee*.

What about Anonymity?

To protect identities, I will give everyone in my research different names and some places too. I will also blur faces within photographs which include any people. Please note: there is a chance fellow friends and colleagues will recognise

you if they have taken part in group activities, or if they know about your specific work or volunteering activities.

Do I have to take part?

You don't have to take part. If you do decide to take part, you can change your mind at any time. You can let know me know if you want to leave at any point in the research.

How will the information be used?

From the research, I will write a report for the University of York which you can view when finished. The results of my research may also be included in

- smaller articles which will be available on the Internet in both UK and global journals,
- in newsletters and magazines,
- at public and academic presentations including local, national and international conferences.

No names or other identifying features will be present as far as possible in any of my written work or presentations.

How to get in touch

You can contact, me, Katrina Foxtton, in person or through email or post: Department of Archaeology, Kings Manor, Exhibition Square, University of York, York, YO1 7EP. Email: kmf505@york.ac.uk.

If you have any problems, you should contact me or the Project Supervisor, John Schofield on 01904 323968.

*THANK YOU FOR READING THIS LEAFLET!
Feel free to ask any questions*

Within the Walls Project Interview Consent form:

Researcher: Katrina Foxton —kmf505@york.ac.uk.

Here you can agree to do an interview with Katrina. Tick each question below:

Have you read and understood the leaflet about the Within the Walls project? Yes No

Have you been able to ask questions about the project? Yes No

Do you understand that your interview will be securely held by the researcher (Katrina) and that she will not use your real name in her writing? Yes No

Do you understand that you can leave the interview at any time? Yes No

Do you understand that the information you give may be used in future research? Yes No

Do you agree to take part in the study? Yes No

If yes, do you agree to have your interview audio-recorded? Yes No

(You can still take part in the study if you say no).

Please ask me if you have any questions

Your name (in BLOCK letters): _____

Your signature: _____

Interviewer's signature: _____

Date: _____

Within the Walls: Photograph Form

Dear

Thank you for taking part in the Within the Walls project. During research, I took photographs of either of things you were doing or things that include your name or work. You may also have taken photographs yourself which can be useful for my research. We will have talked about how these photos can be used in my reports and other written pieces.

I would like to use some of the photographs in my writing. If you're ok with me using these in my research, real names will not be used with the photographs and I will obscure your identity. I may or may not publish all the photographs attached, but in case I do I would be grateful if you would read the next form and decide if you give consent for me to use the images by signing the form. The photographs which include you are attached to the back of this form and are numbered. If any of the images are ones you taken, I would like to ask your permission transfer copyright to myself so that I can potentially publish them. Please complete the next form by signing one of the four boxes:

1. Sign box one if you agree to give me permission to use any photographs that you have taken.
2. Sign box two if you give permission for me to publish all the photos.
3. Sign box three if you give permission for me to publish *some* but not all of the photos. Please state the numbers of the photos you give permission for me to use.
4. Sign box four if you would prefer me not to use any of the photos in my research.

Once completed, it would be helpful if you could return one signed copy of the form to me (another is enclosed for your records). Please let me know if you have any questions.

Many thanks again for your contribution to the project.

Kind Regards,

Katrina Foxton

Photograph Form

On this form you can agree for Katrina to use your photographs. As discussed, Katrina would like to use some photographs (in electronic or print form), in her written work—which

includes a thesis (large report), smaller articles (which will be in online and UK and global paper journals), and public workshops.

The photographs in question are visible on the research website. Any of the photographs you do not wish to be used will be deleted from Katrina's files and records (and not used in any written work).

Please sign either boxes 1, 2, 3, or 4 below:

If any of the photographs were taken by you:

BOX 1. I confirm that these photographs (.....) are owned by me.

I agree that Katrina may publish photographs..... **and all others attached**, in her written work as listed above.

Signed.....

Date.....

OR:

If all the photographs were taken by the researcher:

BOX 2. I agree that ALL the attached photographs can be published in Katrina's written work as listed above.

Signed.....

Date.....

OR:

If you're happy for Katrina to publish some, but not all, of the photos please list the numbers of the photos you're happy for her to use:

BOX 3. I agree that photographs (give numbers).....

.....can be published in Katrina's written work, as listed above.

Signed.....

Date.....

OR

BOX 4. I do not wish any of these photographs to be used in Katrina's written work, as listed above.

Signed.....

Date.....

There are two copies of these forms: one for you and one to give back to the researcher.

Please give one signed form back to Katrina when you have finished filling it in.

If you wish to talk to Katrina, please do not hesitate to contact her. You can get in touch by emailing on kmf505@york.ac.uk.

You will be able to see Katrina's thesis and research through the website once she has published it.

Thank you for filling out the form and your participation

A.v Exploratory Period Conversations & Events

Table 3. Exploratory Conversations/events

Date	Name/role/event and place
11.12.13	<i>John Oxley Archaeologist at CYC @ CYC West Offices</i>
11.12.13	<i>James Foster General Manager @ The Bar Convent</i>
12.12.13	<i>Kate Giles Lecturer at the Dept. of Archaeology @ Kings Manor</i>
13.12.13	<i>Helen Graham Lecturer Uni of Leeds, Head of Co-design Heritage program, WTW team present (and Sarah Rees-Jones, Dept of History and IPUP).</i>
15/01/12	<i>Richard Taylor's lecture for IPUP</i>
21/01/14	<i>Lorna Richardson—Digital Public Archaeology</i>
22.01.14	<i>York Alternative History and York: Living With Heritage IPUP Lecture</i>
28.01.14	<i>Gareth Beale Lecture Accessible Digital Imagery YOHRs</i>
04.02.14	<i>Dr Keith Emerick, Inspector of Ancient Monuments @ English Heritage (Coffee Culture)</i>
04.02.14	<i>Conservation Area Appraisal Panel meeting @ CYC</i>
06.02.2014	<i>Heritage Renaissance officer @ CYC</i>

13/02/14	<i>Helen Moore, Community Engagement Officer @ Minster</i>
17/02/14	<i>IT support at Timeline York Plus (Community groups across York)</i>
17/02/14	<i>John Ives, Chair of CAAP</i>
11/03/14	<i>Administrator at Design, Conservation and Sustainability Team CYC @ West Offices</i>
11/03/14	<i>Steve Roskams @ Dept of Archaeology.</i>
11.03.14	<i>Tegwen Roberts (National Local Heritage Officer), and Claire Price, (National Case-worker) CBA @Cafe 68, Gillygate.</i>
11/03/14	<i>Sian Jones Lecture</i>
15/03/14	<i>Timeline York Plus meeting in York</i>
12/04/14	<i>The Stonebow Inquiry (Helen Graham)</i>
17/04/14	<i>Meeting with Sarah Tester@ Gateway to History—York Archives</i>
03/06/14	<i>Design and Sustainability Manager @ CYC West Offices</i>
01/07/14	<i>Upper and Nether Poppleton PC Neighbourhood Plan Lead @ Kings Manor</i>
22.07.2014	<i>LILAC-TIM in York and Restoration People @ Your Bike Shed</i>
25.07.14	<i>Community organiser (HCT) and shop-owner @Its donated!</i>

30/07/14	<i>A trustee of the Rowntree Society @Kings Manor</i>
06.08.2014	<i>Being Human and Minster Engagement Meeting with Ed Freedman, Sarah Rees-Jones, Kate Whitworth (Learning and Engagement) Chris Connelly (Canon and head of Learning), and Susan ... (Volunteering).@Church House</i>

A.vi Data Management Plan

York Data Management Plan (DMP) for Postgraduate Research Projects

Postgraduate researcher: Katrina Foxton
Project title: Within the Walls: Comparing Heritage Values as Action in Council & Community Asset Transfer Practices in York, UK 2014-2016
Project start/end: November 2013-March 2018
Funder (where applicable): AHRC & City of York Council
Project context: This project discusses and compares heritage values as part of action in places by different and potentially contending groups of people, using York as a case study. Ethnographic methodologies were applied to City of York Council & three examples of Community Asset Transfers projects involving heritage assets. In light of ongoing devolution policies (i.e. the Localism Act) recommendations were made towards the furthering of collaborative, value-enhancing relationships in places, not only between councils and citizens but between citizens themselves.

Defining your data
<p>1a. What data will you produce?</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Interviews using an audio device. These will be transcribed into text. 2. Fieldnotes typed using personal laptop (Lenovo U310 ideapad) 3. High-resolution digital photographs of people, documents and settings recovered in the field (Panasonic LUMIX DMC-FS15) (JPGs) 4. Contextual data from documentary resources, both analogue (pamphlets, books, articles) and digital, (online articles, websites, blogs) will be researched and discussed within word documents in order to deride new conclusions (Lenovo U310 ideapad). 5. Coded qualitative data will generated by NVivo: personal laptop (Lenovo U310 ideapad) (http://www.york.ac.uk/it-services/it/software/a-z/nvivo/#tab-2)

1b. What formats and what software will you use?

1. Audio recordings will be saved as MP3 files; transcripts will be created in and saved as word documents.
2. Fieldnotes will be created either initially on paper (and then typed up into word docs and paper-formats destroyed) or as Microsoft word documents from the onset (word.docx)
3. Photos will be saved as JPEGS and viewed on windows viewer.
4. All data will be transferred to an NVivo project (.npv)
5. NVivo coding resulted will then be exported to Excel (.xls) in order to create visualisations of the data.
6. Selected data visualisations and images will be imported into the main text (word doc.x)
7. All data will be made available in appendices as one .npv database and several word doc.x files.

1c. How much data do you expect to generate?

Any fieldnotes initially as paper and consent forms from interviews are expected to fill half a cabinet drawer (but then at stages in the project to be typed up or scanned, with the originals destroyed)

Main thesis and data appendices: 150 MB (Word doc.x)

NVivo Database: 1315 MB (.npv)

1d. Who owns the data you will generate?

--According to my studentship agreement, the University owns all data I create, but I retain the copyright on publications based upon my data.

--Some documentary material within the main thesis (i.e. IMAGES) belong to participants or organisations, in which case copyright is highlighted.

Looking after your data**2a. Where will you store your data?**

During research, I will store my data on the University's centrally managed network, in my personal filestore (the arch/PG drive). I will use the VPN to connect to my personal filestore and work on/add to my files while I'm away from the office.

- Fieldnotes and participants' consent forms were stored in a locked cabinet within the G65 office

2b. How will you back-up your data?

- Data will be backed up daily by the IT department services via the filestore
- Data will be backed up within a password protected Google Drive folder

2c. Who else has a right to see or use this data during the project?

The researcher's supervisor will have access to the data and will be given the login details for the filestore.

During research, participants will be able to access some parts of the data through a confidential and secure webpage (managed by the researcher) where they will have access to the data which they contributed to only (fieldnotes, audio-data and transcripts, photographs).

CG transcription service will access to some of the audio interviews for the purpose of providing the researcher with transcripts via a google drive folder, and will destroy records of their data after their work is complete (they signed a confidentiality form for this purpose).

2d. How will you structure and name your folders?

Within the filestore and google drive, all data will be labelled within folders as such:

[Within the Walls Data>]

[Audio-files] [Fieldnotes] [Photographs][MISC]

Sub folders will be titled following location names:

[CYC]/[Red Tower][Pre-2011 Asset Transfers]

Where applicable sub-sub headings will be title following sample groups within a location:

[Red Tower Supporters][Residents]/[Wallwalkers]

2e. How will you name your files?

Within the filestore and google drive

1. Fieldnotes will be labelled with the date of capture and either the location or some descriptive information concerning an event when/where fieldwork took place.
2. Audio Files will be titled with dates of capture, the location of capture and participants pseudonym name
3. Images will be titled with an abbreviation of the location of capture, the date, and a number in consecutive order.

4. NVivo is titled "Within the Walls project" in both storage location. Within it the folders and file titles of data mirror that within the filestore and google drive.

2f. How will you manage different versions of your files?

--Each time any fieldnotes are edited as part of the ethnographic writing up and anonymisation process, the originals are moved to the RAW notes folder (next to the same folder which contain the new notes, which will be imported into NVivo). RAW notes will not be made available and deleted/destroyed once data archiving is complete.

--Each time I run a new version of the NVivo model, intermediate files are written over, but a project log is maintained throughout the project and available as part of the dataset.

2g. What additional information will be required to understand your data?

-- Additional notes about interviews and fieldnotes in NVivo 'memos', which will be made available in word document format in addition to the transcripts.

--Meta-data excel sheet to navigate the photographic archive (Appendix G).

Archiving your data

3a. What data should be kept or destroyed after the end of your project?

Fieldnotes (i.e. that written on paper) and consent forms will be destroyed. Any fieldnotes which had not been anonymised will also be destroyed.

3b. For how long should data be kept after the end of your project?

Data storage will be reviewed after 5 years and destroyed after 10years following the University of York Guidelines (<https://www.york.ac.uk/library/info-for/researchers/data/sharing/#tab-2>).

3c. Where will the data you keep be stored at the end of the project?

After research has been completed, the researcher will seek to deposit all data within the University of York Library and the White Rose Etheses Online repository (which also complies with AHRC requirements: <http://www.dcc.ac.uk/resources/policy-and-legal/research-funding-policies/ahrc>).

This data management plan, an account of implementation and any necessary metadata instructions will be available before deposition within the accompanying material.

3d. When will you archive your data? I will provide a copy of the data supporting my thesis to the University for long-term retention when I submit my thesis for deposition (after the examination).

Sharing your data at the end of the project

4a. What data should or shouldn't be shared openly and why?

--Some of my data discusses individual participants with certain opinions which are negative about other identified groups in York.

4b. Who should have access to the final dataset(s) and under what conditions?

White Rose Etheses Online (WREO) will act as tertiary custodians of a digital copy of the thesis and data. I will work with the WREO to ensure that appropriate data access is applied to my deposited anonymised data.

4c. How will you share your final dataset(s)?

My physical data will be retained for the long-term by WREO and the university of York, who will field any requests for access on my behalf.

Implementing your plan

5a. Who is responsible for making sure this plan is followed?

I will take responsibility for carrying out the actions required by this plan and report them to my supervisor as appropriate.

5b. How often will this plan be reviewed and updated?

My supervisor and I will review this plan every 12 months and will agree updates if necessary.

5c. What actions have you identified from this plan?

--To deposit data.

5d. What policies are relevant to your project?

- This project will be covered by the University of York Research Data Management Policy, the City of York Council policy (https://www.york.gov.uk/info/20168/information_management/580/data_protection) and AHRC policy (<http://www.ahrc.ac.uk/about/policies/dataprotectionpolicy/>).

5e. What further information do you need to carry out these actions?

- To consult the RDM on the University of York webpages:
<https://www.york.ac.uk/library/info-for/researchers/data/>.

Signed: 	Version: 2/2
Date created: 26th March 2018	Date amended: 8th November 2018

Based on an original document created by [DataTrain](#) and adapted by the [DaMaRO Project](#).
Further adaptations by the University of York.



A.vii NVivo Themes Sub-Themes

Name	Description	Sources	References	Created On	Modified On
VISION	Gathers all codes that discuss any 'ultimate/end goals' or how participants want to see the result of their efforts practically. Often people say 'I can see this happening' or 'this is the vision statement'. This is the perceived end result of the ASPIRATION so can also be seen in movements and actions.	39	109	04/08/2016 11:43 AM	24/03/2018 05:17 PM
Vision for multi-locality	No broad brush: trying to track visions that take into account multi-faceted areas of place.	22	30	04/08/2016 01:45 PM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
Later idea	No broad brush: trying to track changes in vision so between early ideas and later ones.	13	16	16/08/2016 01:01 PM	24/03/2018 04:36 PM
Early idea	No broad brush: trying to track changes in vision so between early ideas and later ones.	18	30	05/08/2016 11:07 AM	24/03/2018 04:34 PM
Changing vision	No broad brush: Important to see how vision changes in reaction to changes in contexts, resources, values, opposing views.	23	31	04/08/2016 01:48 PM	24/03/2018 05:07 PM
VALUE STATEMENTS & VALUE ACTIONS	Gathers all codes that contain the following key words: desires, wants, intentions, motivations, motive. A viewpoint or observed positive action directed towards heritage/place or practice connected to heritage/place. These don't have to just be heritage focused. The purpose here is to flag up the active values of the participants within data, and NOT HOW THEY GATHERED OTHERS' VALUES (that goes into Collaborative Action).	116	479	04/08/2016 11:28 AM	24/03/2018 04:58 PM
POLICY CONTEXT	Gathers all codes that discuss policy, law, paperwork and other documentary sources that impact/feature in the practices, actions and statements of participants. Also considers larger place-themes' 'scale' impacting on smaller ones.	0	0	06/03/2017 12:08 PM	15/02/2018 09:51 AM
Policy-Legal act or other paperwork	Key words-legal, policy, health n safety, risk assessments, legislation.	48	168	13/01/2017 02:20 PM	24/03/2018 03:48 PM
PHYSICAL RESOURCES	Gathers all codes that contain themes of pragmatic, material resource including finances, assets and provisions.	0	0	13/02/2017 03:05 PM	15/02/2018 09:52 AM
Provisions (services or goods)	Key words: Food, shopping, goods, leisure, services, tea, cake, (generally things that can be brought or provided for) from people to 'customers/consumers' but also connected to social provision (i.e. social time for a benefit like mental health, art classes, counselling etc)	67	196	05/08/2016 11:28 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
Physical Infrastructure & Amenities	Key words: electricity, heating, lighting, utilities, toilets. But also more generally, the physical means to hold organisational or other activity (i.e. a roof, a centre).	74	152	05/08/2016 11:29 AM	24/03/2018 05:01 PM
Finances	Key words: Finances, money, funding, funds	57	256	05/08/2016 11:27 AM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
MEDIA	Gathers all codes that show media, which are identified as various types of material (analogue, digital, mixed) used by people and can be visual or textual (often visual though so include maps, photos etc).	0	0	04/08/2016 11:39 AM	15/02/2018 09:51 AM
Urphenomen	No broad brush: some form of visual communicative media which seems to resonate MORE STRONGLY with other connections beyond the contents that which it communicates. Benjamin	3	4	04/08/2016 11:45 AM	25/10/2017 11:21 AM
Media Overlap	No broad Brush: This is where I find media that is non-interactive (in the sense that it is not editable) but yet breeds interaction through other forms of engagement (such as workshops or events) OR alternatively, media which is highly editable and provides hyperlinking yet is not accessible. Basically transcending my media categories above.	29	89	28/08/2015 05:58 PM	24/03/2018 01:48 PM
Media limitations	No broad brush: Could be issues with wording, failure of language, access to resources of MEDIA ONLY (so not conversations...that would go in opposing views)	96	196	04/08/2016 11:28 AM	24/03/2018 01:48 PM
Functional Media		47	52	21/08/2017 09:36 AM	24/03/2018 04:08 PM
4. Media in Place (I)	(I)=Interactive. No broad brush: Editable but place-bounded media (at the time of 'editing'). High level technological interactive maps or interpretative boards...or even the postit walls in a workshop...or an edible bed!	2	7	16/02/2017 02:25 PM	08/11/2017 04:36 PM

3. Media of Place (NI)	(NI)=Non-interactive. No broad brush: Leaflet or newsletter WITHOUT "fill this comment". Website that is just one page. Video without access to a comment bar. Portable and so can transcend place BUT you cannot edit it.	33	105	16/02/2017 02:29 PM	24/03/2018 12:44 PM
2. Media of Place (I)	(I)=Interactive. Keywords: Facebook, social media, twitter, YouTube. Media that invites you to follow hyperlinks and/or edit, amend. Portable too (via web screens or letterbox).	50	225	04/08/2016 11:41 AM	24/03/2018 04:52 PM
--Venture Across Extraordinary		5	6	04/08/2016 11:28 AM	08/11/2017 04:36 PM
--Velocity		5	10	04/08/2016 11:42 AM	18/10/2017 02:51 PM
--Location		4	5	04/08/2016 11:41 AM	24/03/2018 01:02 PM
1. Media in Place (NI)	(NI)=Non-interactive. Key words: information boards, signs. Heidegger--phenomena, does not induce or encourage interactivity. Info giving. Nothing else. Interpretation board is Static. Sara might argue that there is no such thing, but I am interested to know how some media is 'information', taken as a truth not to be defied or questioned but as a sign.	33	116	04/08/2016 11:40 AM	24/03/2018 01:35 PM
--Location	Where the media is located	9	24	04/08/2016 11:40 AM	24/03/2018 01:30 PM
LOCALITY (Multi-Local)	Gathers all codes that indicate the physical + social pathways across localities (including heritage), the relationship of participants to localities and place-themes, and places to other places (Multi-Local) from different participants' viewpoints (including mine). Both uttered statements and actions in place are included.	0	0	04/08/2016 10:56 AM	15/02/2018 09:56 AM
Sense of place	People talking broadly about 'sense of place' or my own observations on how places 'feel' No broad brush but some key words like atmosphere were coded.	46	111	04/08/2016 11:26 AM	24/03/2018 01:30 PM
Planning or place change	Schemes and strategies for changing place by development or planning of buildings. Key words: planning (application), development.	142	302	13/01/2017 02:52 PM	24/03/2018 05:04 PM
Multi-Locality	No broad Brush. Noticeable scales of Place, or rhizomatic Place overlap, compared in conversation and fieldnotes.	46	162	04/08/2016 12:19 PM	24/03/2018 01:38 PM
Hubs & Discussion Spaces	Key words: community centre. In coding: Can be community hubs, other buildings or places or corners or buses (discussion watering holes!)	50	155	04/08/2016 12:21 PM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
Drawing attention to heritage	Perceiving heritage in place. Key words: heritage, archaeology, archaeological, historic, old. I have asked people what their definitions of heritage is in every interview.	180	544	04/08/2016 12:21 PM	24/03/2018 05:00 PM
Distant	Difficult to pin down, but the opposite to being in place and thinking a bout place...and I mean this happens so much one could say everything not done in place is 'distant' ...so haven't been able to code meaningfully here.	64	82	04/08/2016 11:19 AM	24/03/2018 01:30 PM
Differences in or across place	NO BROAD BRUSH. Bourdieu, Lefebvre, Urry- social differences according to geography, different 'roles' across localities, and physical activities in space. Different dwelling in &/Or on place. People of different descriptions (status etc)-class, jobs, residents, community, and certain organisations...so this can also be in relation to Case Themes.	56	204	04/08/2016 11:23 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
Boundaries or routes	Perceived perimeters of place, thoroughfares etc, roads, official & unofficial perimeters, demarcations of space (political & physical i.e. green 'belt'). Key words: road(s), path, route.	114	366	04/08/2016 10:57 AM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
Being in Place	No BROAD BRUSH. People talking (including myself) about being somewhere and seeing things, and indeed, written shortly after being in place.	58	225	04/08/2016 11:19 AM	24/03/2018 04:52 PM
COLLABORATIVE ACTION	Gathers all codes that show what, why, and how actions within place-themes take place. This includes the 'Collaboration Spectrum' (i.e. how people try to collaborate with others). This theme also overlaps with 'intentional acts' and the discussion of values & visions.	0	0	04/08/2016 10:47 AM	15/02/2018 09:51 AM
Towards better or best practice	Key words: better, improve, advance, progress, increase, easier, simpler. Is this a way of tracking 'expert value'? Or simply different participants indicating their view on an 'improvement' in organisational terms and/or a strategy to this aim. Can be in the past (already happened/ing) and therefore can be seen as related to a 'change', but very specific as it does not cover unanticipated changes (so a reaction to change). Changing the situation, through organisation.	103	461	15/08/2016 10:18 AM	24/03/2018 05:04 PM
THE COLLABORATION SPECTRUM	Subheading: Ladder of participation, collaborative continuum spectrum.	0	0	13/02/2017 12:14 PM	15/02/2018 09:35 AM

	1. KNOWLEDGE GATHER & EXCHANGE 3. ENGAGEMENT METHODS	2. VALUE GATHER & EXCHANGE 4. LOCAL DECISION MAKING				
4. Local decision making or responsibility (devolution)	No broad brush: Decision making power being shared to wider individuals or groups (residents and community groups)		39	89	13/01/2017 02:38 PM	24/03/2018 05:17 PM
3. Engagement & Recruitment Methods	No broad brush: Ranges from an inclusive discussion between two people working through ideas to wider consultation AND strategies for volunteer recruitment. Co-decision making is present but often can be found alongside *being shifted in a certain direction*, i.e. a direction that's already in place.		56	305	15/08/2016 02:29 PM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
--Unexpected engagement	No broad brush: Serendipitous engagement. Can feel novel and exciting (but things don't stay novel for long.)		26	44	20/01/2017 12:14 PM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
--Meetings or workshops	Key words: meeting, workshop. Quite similar to event but more focused on a specific kind of engagement (less leisurely!)		62	201	05/08/2016 10:45 AM	24/03/2018 05:07 PM
--Lack of engagement	No broad brush: noticing a lack of engagement (which is desired by a party)		18	43	17/01/2017 03:03 PM	24/03/2018 04:35 PM
--Events	Key word: event--this may be for leisure and for the potential of further conversations and engagement		52	98	15/08/2016 10:34 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
--Email communication	Key word: email(s) often used to help reach out to people, create times to meet and talk further. Show a certain level of connection if emails are being sent between parties.		22	32	05/08/2016 10:43 AM	24/03/2018 05:04 PM
--Contrasting views	No broad brush: highlights a disagreement between different individuals or groups but also in some cases that they are in discussion towards making decisions! So can be very useful to recognise contrasting views.		32	124	16/08/2016 01:08 PM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
2. Value Gather & Exchange	No broad brush: Highlights steps taken to find social values (opinions, needs, desires, concerns) or economic values. Theory Riegl, Fielden, Mason De la Torre. Overlaps with Knowledge but generally has to include approaching people (in some method) to understand their values. However, the 'demarcation' of those values (typologies) isn't necessarily shared, nor will the values gained be used widely to make choices except by the 'gatherers'.		20	55	04/08/2016 01:57 PM	24/03/2018 05:00 PM
--Using visuals as value gathering or exchange technique	No broad brush: Method by which gathering or exchange of values (needs, opinions, concerns, desires) takes place through visual media or graphics		23	32	04/08/2016 02:12 PM	24/03/2018 01:27 PM
--Qualitative Methods	No broad brush: recognising ways of gaining value via collection of opinions, consultation. We are all doing research!		5	7	04/08/2016 12:01 PM	24/03/2018 01:30 PM
--Promoting place value	No broad brush: recognising that value of place can be changed through certain actions (such as advertising/promoting) ...this is info sharing with a spin, possibly connected to a 'goal' of some sort.		22	39	04/08/2016 02:08 PM	24/03/2018 01:26 PM
--Economic valuation	No Broad Brush: Finding out how much people are willing to pay (WTP) for a service, experience or product.		6	10	04/08/2016 02:01 PM	24/03/2018 11:28 AM
1. Knowledge gather, reasoning & exchange	Key words: evidence, information. Can include term 'research', report, fact finding, gaining an understanding, insight, perspective. This is the start of the 'rung' as it were, because this knowledge can be shared (exchanged) but generally the task of gathering it is not shared.		75	450	13/01/2017 10:15 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
--Evidence type	Flags up points about the nature of 'evidence', Key words: subjective or objective		58	129	13/01/2017 11:32 AM	24/03/2018 01:31 PM
--Decision making knowledge	Key words: decision (s). Highlighting where knowledge is utilised to make informed decisions.		30	103	17/01/2017 02:53 PM	24/03/2018 05:01 PM
Sense of being shifted in a certain direction	No broad brush--where participants or myself feel there is something (external context of person) influencing their actions--not necessarily in a bad way		23	42	23/11/2016 05:38 PM	24/03/2018 04:38 PM
People Power & Structure	No broad brush: Indicates where there is a certain shape of organisation between different people who are organised & motivated to a task, taking on certain roles.		76	189	05/08/2016 11:31 AM	24/03/2018 04:58 PM

Roles	Signifies the specificity of an individual or organisation taking on, or being allocated a job/task and how they carry this role/work. Key words: work, role, carry out, undertake, do.	85	294	21/11/2016 11:32 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
Process	No broad brush: basically how people describe a job, task, objective being undertaken as part of a role	86	162	17/01/2017 04:19 PM	24/03/2018 04:08 PM
Past Actions	Key words: before, past, back then, previously, previous	35	113	13/01/2017 11:26 AM	24/03/2018 03:49 PM
Changes to organisation	NO BROAD BRUSH: Brings to fore CHANGE of the the direction of action (so more organisational than physical). The ingredients are a sum of new knowledge, new connection, decisions, other unexpected impacting factors within the immediate local milieu. Theory: Deleuze & Guttari's 'becoming'. Overlaps quite a lot with Planning & Place Change	71	150	04/08/2016 02:35 PM	24/03/2018 05:00 PM
CHALLENGES	Gathers all codes that discuss specific challenges or difficulties in heritage action. Both uttered statements and actions are included.	0	0	06/03/2017 12:06 PM	15/02/2018 09:51 AM
Time issues	Key words: not enough time, lack time.	43	133	30/11/2016 07:55 AM	24/03/2018 05:15 PM
Space issues	Key words: small, not enough space, not big enough	44	89	21/11/2016 10:42 AM	24/03/2018 05:00 PM
Lack of people power or structure	Key words: Nobody, not enough people, lack of staff/volunteers	35	109	13/01/2017 04:13 PM	24/03/2018 05:07 PM
Concern	From Heidegger originally but also draws on Grenville ontological insecurity (fear of loss). Key words: Concern, worry, doubt, fear. Not necessarily knowing how to address in practical terms, perhaps beyond reach.	39	139	04/08/2016 11:29 AM	24/03/2018 05:23 PM
Challenges	Key words: negative, anger, disappointment, difficulty. A stumbling block to action, progress or intentions. Very practical and understood (known, identified) as a barrier	86	490	09/11/2016 01:18 PM	24/03/2018 05:17 PM

A.viii Ongoing Coding Experiences (Memos)

08/11/16

Not satisfied with many of my theme titles: they seem overly complex and they seem to overlap.

All the Place stuff is duplicating and overly complex.

Centre of communication (feels a bit too specific...maybe location of dialogue? Not going to include this a lot I don't think, (this is what you'd like red tower to be but it is not this way ATM (except for one or two times) delete despite wish to include Amin, Thrift & Massey's theoretical standpoint here) Or hang on...what about meeting/discussion place? That can include pubs, spaces where we (people in general) chat. Keeping, but rewording to meeting/discussion place.

Communication about place (I am going to change this to people talking about place!) On second thoughts, considered that sometimes people are speaking about place or referring to it in other ways? Sharing knowledge about place? Better. Bigger. In fact, I should make this the main theme because it shows I am mindful of different standpoints of PLACE.

--Speaking about place (merged with new speaking about place)

--Failure of communication (This is vague...do I refer to limits of spoken speech? Written?)

--Attempted "venture across" (Ubergang) Heidegger (same again and big links here with the Media stuff)

In fact, I am just going to move these two above to the media stuff and review when I get down to there.

Familiarity with a place

--Distance from place (physical distance) Not sure whether this little branch is doing a good job...maybe can place under sharing knowledge (from a distant standpoint)

--Proximity localness (sharing knowledge from a physically close standpoint)

It will be interesting to go back after the broad brush and sift through 'sharing knowledge of place' and see where this sharing comes from—distant or proximate?

Knowledge about place (merged with sharing knowledge about place)

Perceived sense of place

--'pastness' (this can go into sharing knowledge about place...remember when you do this you need to specify WHO is sharing knowledge about place...including yourself. But do remember also your images! Good point...maybe for now go in as child themes not merged)

Perceiving a perimeter of place (sharing knowledge about place)

--Perceiving a physical place barrier (can be merged with above)

Rhizomatic place overlap (new title here)

-- (nope, it was too long and too vague...has been simply merged with above and shortened...And I think it will need to go into sharing knowledge as well, to specify who is sharing the knowledge—from whose point of view is this?)

Divided spatial practices (was too long, have shortened)

I'm going to have a think about this but make a few changes first (for simple duplication reasons i.e. Familiarity and knowledge about place are arguably the same thing). See above reconfiguring.

Right 10th today and I've made the updates from the 9th, so now I'm going to see how I crack on with this updated place theme.

I think it's ok, finished June 2015 notes but now I am finding that many of the themes feel "iffy"—just not getting that solid sense of certainty in my mind and I want to work towards this. Essentially looking to have all themes give me a sense of certainty within this categorisation process (that will enable me to write the narrative of Red Tower—that's the whole purpose here).

I think the PLACE and ACTION themes are alright now.

Other THEMES to be reworked:

Visual Media (change to MEDIA in general and communication, cos this must include the feedback forms, posters, leaflet, interpretation signs etc).

Urphenomen (hmm, I mean I think it is important but it could come through in a discussion...but it can be objects and not just media...for examples the weird donated materials we've got in red tower. Going to move this into the emerging themes sections for those oddities...I can't think of any more other than the tea cups). But then again...I have it in the theory section. It's a weird one.

Seeing place (Walking and seeing place FLANEUR) move up to place, merge with proximate Static media & Logos (simplify)

I'd like to show the quantitative data of the LOGOS –Portable media—at some point.

Distribution maps of logos would be fun, alongside quantitative data from those static signs outside red tower...for example, can I get a 'press here' button if you are looking at this sign!? That would be fun, right? How do you rate this sign? Like the ones you get at a café or at the Heathrow security place. Or a motorway services loo.

This might be fun to do alongside the wallwalkers interviews that I want to do. Anyway Content, Location, Number of views and determining Velocity need to be better worked out afterwards if at all. I am broad brushing here at the current time.

Social Media (merge with LOGOS) and read above

Red Tower Action and Red Tower volunteer (in People Themes) seem to be duplicating each other (i.e. I am having to code twice!) ...there's basically got to be a better way too not overlap RT action, RT volunteers and the individual participants...sort through afterwards? You've got to be tighter at this. Ok decided to make participants a child theme of RT volunteers. A bit easier then.

Value gathering techniques Have made a few changes here. What I should do is try my very best to code them separately. I will thank myself later.

Uttered Values & Vision Do I need to specify whose making these in the title? Maybe not. Wait till the interviews with this one and perhaps the one below too on Vision. And you must think about the social divisions at that point too.

Aspiration and desires

Concern for place

Vision for place

New theme: Collaborating/working together physically? Or this to go in Red Tower action? (leave as it, way too complicated)

Difficulties facing action...what about difficulties facing vision? (leave as it, way too complicated)

Emerging themes and people. Loving some of these! Do they need to be simplified?

09/11/2016

Reflecting on the wording of the following themes

--Indicating a capability to act (if someone has indicated they can act, before they do it)

--Incapable (not acting, for a certain unspecified reason)

--Value action gap (wanting something but not acting towards it)

--Intentional Action (wanting to do something and acting on it).

These are quite (overly) complex concepts in themselves and not quite fitting with the notes because each assumes that I have gained in depth knowledge into the activities people undertake (i.e. I have somehow been able to decipher why they've done something, as well as that they've done it). In reality, (or at least from fieldnotes) I've only ever could describe the

actions as they are happening. It's only in the interviews that I will know more about intentions.

The other thing is that in my own reflections I've noticed that lack of action is linked to lack of SKILL or confidence in skills.

DO I put this in with the intentional action stuff?

Can I should I simplify the intentional actions and capability to act OR do I simply retitle them, saying this is an activity?

Ok. So, I am proposing a reconfiguration of the Red Tower Action Themes. I am simply going to aggregate these and make it simple:

Action (a physical action in place that is being undertaken by Red Tower Volunteers and is going towards 'the makings of the Red Tower').

Non- action will cover value action gap and incapable, and action that might have been taken but for various reasons, was not.

I think Intentional action, Value action gap and incapable/capability to act will have to be thoroughly thought through in the discussion section really.

Value gathering is a separate action so that'll stay the same.

As will 'change' impacting RT.

So, I'm going to make these changes and then break for lunch, while it takes ages to save!

29/11/16

Right so I have been coding for a good couple of weeks now and feeling some aspects of this are started to get into a groove and become more fluid--i.e. my mind is more connected to the themes and is looking for specific content during the coding process. I know a few of them are still in need of tightening (particularly the Values Gathering comes to mind).

At this broad-brush stage, I am coding sometimes whole passages of notes, extensive paragraphs rather than sentences. Sometimes this does lead to laziness and the overcoding of selected content which could otherwise be chopped into say 2 or three sections and coded according to different themes.

This is not necessarily the worst thing to happen because I do know that the correct themes will be there (but they'll be laying over content that isn't necessarily relevant to them). But I will be giving myself a job afterwards when I am selecting the key moments to go through and see what exactly I am getting at within the data; what themes really are present and where they are in the selected text.

Also, I am not coding everything. Sometimes the themes are already present in the text (I have already coded to a specific themes) and I think, "well, this is a reiteration of what's been said and done before. I might as well leave it to be read later and see if it makes it into the narrative." In some cases, I do not code because they are boring and tedious...I wonder if I need to think about more emerging themes? I will consider this. Mostly this is to do with my own planning and to do lists.

The other thing I am having to do while coding is make use of the editing tool. This is because I will read something and realise, it really isn't going to make it either the key moments or the narrative 'fillers'. So, I have been deleting aspects of the fieldnotes as and when. I will keep track of a good example when I come across one but generally these are when I have been writing down "I am emailing this person, I have this to-do list" And I really think this is just super tedious. I will be able to make it clear that that is what I must do. Maybe at some point I can work out how many emails I sent in a day...that'd be fun! I have left a lot of this in but also deleted some too...I will admit I am not being consistent here. So OK, I will decide to leave them in and just not code them.

The other times I have been deleting are to do with ethical reasons. I have judged certain things not appropriate to include especially having not been able to retrieve consent from

people, or ways to reach them to check afterwards. This is very difficult and will probably be ongoing.

CYC Coding techniques

The coding technique for the CYC interviews is almost sentence by sentence rather than whole passages (or at least this is what I am aiming to do, sure there is a way to compare how I am coding between datasets)

At this point in data mining, info needs to be succinct, I need to draw things out and discuss them with simplicity. So closer coding, more scrutiny than with broad brush coding.

As a result, the themes are being renamed somewhat and new themes being created to incorporate the CYC way of doing things. Especially in the ACTION themes, including Knowledge Gathering & Exchange (to compliment the more specific Value Gathering) and flag up the concerns being upheld at the council regarding Objective vs. Subjective. This should be in another memo...

The one thing I am also noticing concerning the interviews. I have written about this elsewhere--essentially the way I interact is to put myself in the position of a comrade or someone who is interested and needs help to understand. Which is what I am. I wanted to work in practice too much to be the researcher I could have been. But do I take it then that these interviews are worthless? I should think not. There's a lot of good 'meaty' stuff here. PRACTICE LED research is the key here.

I only hope that the practitioners will allow these words to go forward (but enough of that for now).

30/11/16

CHANGES THEME:

Okay so today I am thinking about the theme, particularly the 'changes' theme

This theme is extremely important for the narrative of the chapter 7 that I am writing. And I'm having a bit of a review pitstop because I've done over half of my fieldnotes that I have the 2015 and 2016. The changes theme is signifying moments in which something alters the course of the red tower trajectory, which is important in terms of this idea of things progressing and the line of flight which is important to the assemblage theory that I've decided to draw on. I am trying to link how things changing are to do with place and are to do with locality. Or not as the case may be.

I think the changes theme is an interesting way of thinking about heritage as a process. As a progressive constructive endeavour by individuals and I'm hoping that this kind of insight will be important to other people including the local council and the funders, locality, who have helped so far and have written some extremely interesting Documents.

Basically, I have coded enough data to dive into it. If that makes sense. I can see that I have a lot of changes impacting red tower themes that are mostly in 2015 rather than 2016 so it looks as though many of the changes that impacted red tower were in 2015. Trying to think about that in terms of my own memory and there are a couple of occasions in which changes did impact the red tower's trajectory in 2016. I am surprised that there is not more 2016 in the way of changes that impact. But we met a lot more connections so that might be another way of looking at it is a new I have been a lot more connections made in 2016.

So, I'm going to now open the theme that is the 'new helper a new connection' and see what that tells me and then think back on memo.

Doh, realised I haven't coded all of 2016 hence potentially askew in my data. Having a look at the new helper theme in any case.

Okay so I've read through a couple of selected extracts that have been coded with the theme changes impacting red tower action. What I am getting from reading some of the extracts are the references rather is the I have overcoded with the change theme. What I'm doing is finding a significant change but then also coding every slight inference to that change within the main body of the data of texts. This results in an over spreading of the source of that

change, throughout the data. So, say the change is for example like an epicentre impacting a set of circumstances. And then I followed that impact, the follow-on effects the consequences of so that it's the 'changes' have bled through into the main body of the text rather than being distilled moments of change. So, the way going on it forward now have decided that with what I've got. I will be able to go through the current codes later and hunt for the initial source of change. And this will have to be part of the sieving through for the 20 key moments and I will have to be very strict with what data to explore within the narrative of chapter 6. I have potentially clues as to where what the changes although sometimes it might be a bit unclear, So I'll have to hunt the changes through the in the current codes that I have.

In terms of my coding on from here is just being clear and concise with what I mean by a change. Change in this definition is quite simple really: a new connection, a new form of funding or finances, anything that impacts on the amenities or provisions (so non-monetary donations), a decision being made, and any other act of God. I'll add the last one as the flooding is in this case such a thing.

I think the decision being made is going to be the most difficult change to code in a concise way. Essentially decisions being made is happening all the time. It is the weaving of strategies towards a certain vision towards a certain goal. I have to think really hard and long about decisions being made towards a goal. Are we being effective with our decision-making. What is one of the reasons behind these decisions. Is it because we have new knowledge? Is it because something else has impacted? It is interesting and important.

And to add to this, some ideas of why 'change' is an important theme: I am concerned that this will reduce the story of the red tower simply to a product of cause and effect however what I'm trying to achieve with this story is to show that changes are also impacted by many things including the dynamics of place. And it is in these moments of change that I want to see or I'm investigating if place plays an important role in the decisions that are being made in an everyday sense. And that's the point of this PhD.

The last thing is the importance of including my participants opinions about what consists of a change significant to the progress of the red tower. And this will be important to seek out and include within the narrative of my chapters 6 and seven particularly. I will be needing to make time to hassle the directors of the red tower and potentially some of the residents to asking them key moments in the process. It will be tricky to do it anyone other than the red Tower guys. This is because as the residents have been difficult to engage with so asking them what are the five key moments of the red tower's progress, it's a misnomer, I can't do that. Boils down to is that I don't have access to nor rapport with the residents of Rosemary Place. I don't have that kind of relationship with those that I consulted during the are February March period. So, a really although I'd like to include more people (because that makes clear that my subjective views can be set alongside others) and I will have to make clear within that dynamic where I'm putting across my views and the red Tower guys views that there are other people thinking other things outside of our circle.

17/01/17

I decided that I was going to use the same themes for CYC coding as with the Red Tower ethnography.

But this process is changing the names of themes.

1. I end up wanting themes to be pithy and more exemplary (less theoretical obscured, i.e. LOGOS became Interactive Media) ...sometimes really very hard to make a divide between the two. For example, Static media is that which you cannot make any editions or additions to. But sometimes it is used TO generate a discussion (i.e. video). So, have proposed Media Overlap (the grey areas) where something that should be static but acts interactively? Or some of the issues tensions between static and interactive (i.e. I want this to be interactive but it cannot be because of the medium (and the tech)).
2. To include wider definitions of ideas--for example, in RT notes *Role Allocation* theme was acceptable due to the 'working through' of roles. But Roles in the CYC were much more

defined (although see the Hannah interview), so *Allocation* wasn't the word. *Configuration* became the amendment...this may change.

Emerging Themes (aren't these just 'resources?') Nope. Leave'em.

Locality in general is ok but *Different spatial practices* is a mix of demographics according to geography, different 'roles' across localities, and actual activities in space. Hmmm. I am thinking this is all kind of connected! I just maybe need to work on my definitions here. This is a complex theme but I don't think you can simplify it...Social geography & practice? Or Social Geography & Social practice? No these are interlinked...this is the Different dwelling in &/Or On place! leaving it for now. Very complex theme. Needs reading up on.

Perceiving pastness in place was simplified to *heritage in location* but I will consider this again...I think the word perceiving is vital to perceptions.

3. New Themes were created--i.e. *Process* underneath *Organisational Infrastructure*, and *Engaging others*.

This last one is particularly important as it brings up the issues of access...consultation etc. Maybe it is *Sharing Points of View* too? Overlap here I feel. So, have merged and given a description suggesting there is some 'spectrum' and range between two people talking and a wider consultation...to make decisions (And I think this is Habermas coming through there now).

4. The Value Gathering themes aren't very easy to use in the CYC data, *Knowledge Gather & Transfer* seems to be a replacement, as time and again I am finding people are seeking knowledge to gain info on decision making--best informed decisions. This is always swayed by policy (sustainable) and paper working but can also be impacted by 'ground swell'. Ok, so I have merged *Value Gathering* (the act of) under Knowledge gather and exchange. I feel this tree branch is going to need further attention because it is underpinning this tension between the Council wanting evidence base, and the more qualitative concept of 'social value', which they don't necessarily find to be 'evidence'. There is potential overlap between some of the processes in gaining 'social value' and what they already conceive to be 'consultative data'.

There is SO much happening here...because a local authority wishes to be informed of the local issues and need of its residents alongside more scientific issues of 'evidence base'. This is an underlying tension. And I would like to visualise it if possible. Does this section need to be organised as if it is the ladder of participation or the 'spectrum of collaboration'?

5. Feel like I'm overcoding sometimes. Should be simple. This has led me to consider that I go through all the themes and give a bit of a spring cleaning--i.e. is this Relevant to that code?

But then I'm sensing coding is like althiometer reading. Putting meanings together to create a new one?

Hmm.

Maybe a Quality Control Check...

29th Jan

Quality Control has commenced

[get to a theme, define in properties and give synonyms, text search to specific sources, add if uncoded (via highlight- specific) then move to specific code query. Go through, uncoding if deemed irrelevant]

It is tough. Working out non- relevance is being brutally honest; i.e. does this really apply? (why don't we like making decisions lol?) It is very time-consuming...with roughly 15% changes made (my guesstimate) (is it worth it?) I think I need to prioritise themes that more palpably demonstrate the CDA brief & my RQs.

--What heritage values are relevant to different city-wide visions in York?

This can be shown by big data cloud which groups the different areas from which I spoke about, planning, local planning, transport, neighbourhood, heritage, HER, neighbourhoods & communities etc. big cloud showing

--the most frequent word

--frequency with other areas

--values & challenges for heritage

--What are the current challenges facing this relationship?

--Currents steps of best practice?

--HAPs: a different scale: What relationship do HAPs have with different localised values?

--What are the current challenges facing these relationships?

--What is the relationship between HAPs and the level of local civic action?

--What is the relationship between HAPs and strategies for other forms of community engagement?

--What is the relationship between HAPs and locality?

--Currents steps of best practice?

Conclusions

Prioritised-to-clean themes, which will need to be apparent in the write up:

VALUES:

Visions--done

values --done (how are you going to sift through perceptions of other values and their own?)

Concerns--done

ACTION:

Difficulty or Challenge-done

Change-done

Towards best practice-done

LOCALITY:

Different Spatial practices* done

*Since changed name to Divisions in place

Erf. So, I knew Knowledge gather & exchange was going to be a toughie. I'm seeing also it is integral to the RQs (at least at CYC level). It is a tangled tree. The issue is that I've overlapped the meanings of Value Gathering and Engaging Others. I need to determine whether there are in fact one and the same. The thing is with value gathering, this doesn't necessarily lead to ongoing LOCALISM, whereas engaging with others can.

And I have vowed to seek values in ACTION...I certainly feel the values of the CYC practitioners are good research, best methods, increased civic action, joining the dots, contact zones, good training, LOGIC and rational, evidence base, heritage is part of economic industry, shouldn't be used as a tool for nimbyish, but should still be passing duties over to others (who should be better representing their communities). Some do see the value of heritage as a wonderful thing, but exposure to other basic needs contending with history tends to put it as a consideration.

Brain dead. Might have to come back to this tomorrow (sigh). For my own (data's) sake, otherwise I won't know what questions to ask.

14/02/17

Ok, so after 2 weeks of quality control (31st Jan-10th feb) I deemed the themes worthy to begin data mining (and visualising) and having achieved a bit of this in both NVivo and excel this week. However, in visualising (either in diagrams or tables) I can still see some issues with three aspects of the themes (and I really need to avoid when doing the RT stuff!!!):

1. Sub-child-themes: are they overly obscure, fluffy or irrelevant? Shall I rearrange, delete or not use in initial CYC visualisations (come back to later????)

So other than the COMMS & MEDIA, I think that some of the child themes are providing extremely interesting insights but may not necessarily need to be included in the matrix query, because of their highly specific nature. I shall aggregate these into their parent themes

and this would help with the overall presentation of graphics. And then bring them out in the discussion if necessary (when I write I should literally go through each one systematically according to the theme and discuss). SO, I will need to do another ULIMATE Matrix Query.

However, the COMMs & MEDIA themes are giving me some trouble because I would like to achieve something with them more nuanced ultimately...but they are underused ATM and rather obscure. Without having coded the MISC and HER interviews, they are debunking (so I will have to consider this when I look at the EXTRA data query).

In the meantime, I will attend to the main titles best I can and aggregate the child themes when I do the query, discussing them within the chapter where appropriate.

2. Theme title-still need to be pithy and really highlight what they ought to be signifying

Gone through these again. Re named COMM's, and Organisational infrastructure (plus moved it up!) Think specifically within matrixes and diagrams, not being able to subjugate the themes more obviously is contributing to some confusion. Maybe get someone else to look at'em.

3. Have I REALLY coded accurately according to my own definitions, WILL my coding stand up to scrutiny?

Do a last quality check sifting through your references, tightening up your terms, coding and uncoding where necessary.

CHECK THESE QUESTIONS BEFORE YOU GO ANY FURTHER WITH THE DATA VISUALISATIONS
LAST QUALITY CHECK.

SOME EXTRA TODOS from this quality check:

Finish the Neighbourhoods & Equalities quality check (DONE)

The COMM's and Media is a mess. Sort it out (DONE)

Code HER and pop into Heritage system (DONE...but not the images hmm. Extra data)

What am I going to do about 'distant'/proximate cos they seem obvs? (DONE)

Think I'll leave distant and proximate out of the Matrix, coz any work the council does is going to be distant from the space (and opposite for Red tower folks). Highlighting proximate work CYC do is interesting though. I think these two will just have to be considered within the highlighted divisions in and across space. They are quite conceptual.

A.ix Methodological Reflections

22/07/15 CYC method reflections

I have written up notes (which takes a bit longer than anticipated) and sent out invitations to 5 other people to see if I can shadow work activities. These have been recommended by serial gatekeeper HF. Unfortunately, no one has agreed to this; as a result, I think a change in strategy is required.

I think the change is to offer either individual or group interviews to the participants. Not sure which one will work better but the key thing is I need to try to approach again.

Options: Single interviews:

Less daunting, more disclosed. Will I need to revise my questioning approach, my last one went ok. Definitely send out multiple emails!!

Group interviews:

More collaborative, dynamic. Could essentially set an agenda with regards to working through a problem.

My question is whether different medias can influence place-making activities in heritage management—inclusive. Or is it other activities? But if I am the one who is asking this question (placing my argument over the top of others) surely people are not going to be interested in responding—collaborating? Maybe the approach is to ask them what they think on this issue. OK. Try that. I think interviews first and then maybe a group interview. If the re-approach with single interviews doesn't work, I will try for group interview with others. And if that doesn't work I will focus my attention on all the leads (NPlanning, HER, Statements of significance, Listed Building consent). But I'd rather work with people. This will need to involve some renegotiation on the part of my position.

Also, HF has given me access to the CYC portal (I have my own email account) but I can currently only access this from within the West Offices...speaking to the IT guys to check if this

can be changed—it will be useful. ---later had been achieved, a now enjoying writing CYC emails from my laptop.

28/07/15

Looong day. But got some headway. Meeting with Harry went ok. Meetings booked for tomorrow. Focus group potential for the 8th. Meeting on the 10th with RA guys. Hopefully three Focus Groups by end of August.

I also read Marcus's 2013 article. I'd previously read the abstract and a few lines, and knew (along with some imaginative but not inaccurate referencing to his other work) that it would be integral to my discussion of values in chapter 3. Values are not just considered as tools but part of the processes of assemblages and thus an ethnographic design and therefore the researcher must "make trials or contests of norms and values the basis of forming working collaborations and arguments, with uncertain, often messy outcomes, in the pursuit of ethnographic insights in the field". I also love the idea of the ethnographic design being a 'third space' or 'design studio'. My note book is where I create and attempt to build this space. Scribbles of structure.

After this reading, I went back to NVivo. (after yesterday, I was determined to understand what went wrong in my brain). Well it was easy enough to go back and create nodes (or codes—they seem happy to interchange these people which is somewhat obscure) from my research questions. I now have ten. And yet the qualm is that with my ongoing collaborative methodology (which I am beginning to understand is inevitable from Marcus again) HOW do I make my analysis understood as a worthy action to my participants? How do my Qs come across? I think only through the merging of their concerns and mine will I fully understand. Much to learn. Over and out.

29/07/15

Today I read some more of Marcus—regarding middle range theory and assemblage—and input to my M4. Then I interviewed one of the planning officers. I was surprised how long the talk went on for to be honest. He seemed very happy to talk at length (but perhaps not in

details) with regards to points. If I wanted to stay on a point, I sometimes felt that it I had to come back to it later. He was subtle. I would not say we had an immediate working connection, more philosophical sharing of ideas, which will not impact on the reality of his job. I wonder how I can go forward.

10th August 2015 CYC and Walmgate

Had a very 'multi-local' experience today. Interviewed first at the West Offices and then at Waitrose near Red Tower. The first one was about transport and infrastructure, and this was 'right up my street' with regards to dwelling and even talked about the spaces in between buildings. A Heidegger humdinger! But then on my cycle over (in a rush to get to the next interview on time) I was noticing how roads 'take' you places (I know—obviously). I allowed myself to 'instinctively go' towards the way I thought might be best instead of consciously navigating, and I got there in under 10 mins! This may have something to do with the fact that York's centre is tiny, defined as it is by the walls. But the conversation beforehand had made me think how things could very well have been different. Imagining the walls and the roads as being entangled in different ways is...well I guess that's the job of the officers at the council. I also noted the bumps in the roads—and remembered my bicycle needs its wheels pumping.

That York's smallness is a defining character is something that came up in the following interviews. Feels like a village. I guess for some maybe? Maybe not others without mobility—walking will feel further for some.

The second interview, in a practical sense, was difficult. I felt like I was leading the conversation too much—as if the terrain was unfamiliar to my interviewee. And I don't think they liked the recorder. And so, I took notes after I thought the interview has finished, because they had kept on talking about specific subjects related to the area. I will have to go through these carefully, some of it was very critical of another person.

The third interview went better, but this person wanted to talk about everything under the sun, and I had to work to bring back to the subject at hand (at least to the specificity of York

and place). But then this person was knowledgeable about many things, and I did enjoy going far and wide on some of the topics. We also had wayfinding conversations regarding the Red Tower.

overall, I think the process is working. After agreeing to interview in person (or sending emails as intro), I'm sending emails with the info sheet and a bit of extra explanation which is consistent and then getting them to read info sheet again at the interview along with consent form. Everybody has signed and this makes me feel comfortable that they trust me. The write up is taking longer than expected (god the transcription is going to be hard!) but I am essentially five interviews away from feeling able to set up a group interview.

11th August reflecting on the progress and data steps

There is no doubt that access, the nature of collection and analysis methods (coding) have flagged up new knowledges relevant to the research—to which I have reacted to and am still. So, this is my train of thought for a methodological dialogue:

- The way I invite people for interviews. Chat first, then follow up with email, and info sheet, do interview and consent form. This has so far been the best way for both CYC and RT participants. I have had to be aware of making the emails somewhat similar but also reacting to the specific-ness of the conversations we have had. This may not work with the other groups, because I possibly will not have had the same interactive opportunity to chat with them (although this has been the case with 3 of the residents).
- Some of the interviewees get through the interview a great deal quicker (RT) and I wonder if this is to do with the fact that I know these people better...or that they have more to go over in their minds to explain, for example, their roles and opinions. Need to keep an eye on this.

The topics are not being followed consecutively as the conversations have developed in different ways, e.g. sometimes the definition of heritage has come further up. But having this topic schedule there is helpful as a way of structuring the interviews and keeping the

momentum going. The use of specific words like 'concern', 'intentions', 'desires', 'information sharing' directly feed into my theory.

- Because of the time issue, the individual interviews are not going to be transcribed fully and the codes will not be fully explored before the focus group. But I think, if I manage to write up the fieldnotes and the summaries of the interviews (a 'data' review) and then go through and list some of the themes and media I am noticing I will be able to think about how the group interview can be configured.
- Primarily, I think a focus group could follow same topic schedule but reduced to these two sections:

[Roles-brief, Concerns for York and heritage] (bring up word clouds? Will this just highlight the fact you've spoken individually? On the cusp of not being confidential, showing your workings).

[Information sharing and media]—do we like, don't we like-how do we know if we are getting the message across? Do we think this has been the issue, and what can Kat do from here] (we could score these?) How much we think these DO the job. Do they have the same job? Do they increase participation (ladder of participation here!) Other forms of consultation? Will be different for CYC as they are from different roles.

- Ultimately, I would like to bring in the words from my themes (concerns, intentions for heritage) but what I think is seriously required is the bringing in of the MEDIA.

Here is a list of potential media for each place-node (and I can go through fieldnotes and so on to add to this):

RT—Facebook, Twitter, Press releases, postcards, posters, A-frame, the Friends of York Walls Panels, interpretation panels. Anything else?

CYC—Local plan, website, twitter accounts, HER, letters. Consultation. Anything else (add from data review).

- In my mind, this method is more suited to the collaborative aspect of the research. So, got to be semi-structured, and could form activities that inform my approach with RT, and ongoing work with the CYC. The data review demonstrates taking a theoretical dialogue and development. SO, whilst this follows essentially the proposed steps in the methodology (fieldnotes, interview, group interviews, and survey), the understand of how these features has been adapted in recognition.

So, steps forward are to

1. Write up fieldnotes and summary transcripts from interviews (share these with participants sooner rather than later).
2. Consider the data review through highlighting themes (through word clouds), do at least one value map, and pick out media that is used (check informational leads too!)
3. Consider the format of the questions that need to emerge during focus group
4. Do at least one focus group and write at least one report
5. This can then lead into the survey! BOOM.

15th August 2015

SO today I did interviews with the 'Wall-walkers' and I think it's easy to say this will have to be the correct term, because, as turns out, I ended up doing a group interview with people who lived in York (so not necessarily tourists).

My two issues in this activity are:

1. Where to accost people? I want to make sure people have been able to have a look round. But I won't know that they have unless I am in a good place (so in front of the tower might not be best). Hanging around in the front seemed better, and sitting down felt nice...but then again, there is the issue of
2. Is there a bias in being near the red tower? If so, what else can I do?

KA was very helpful in notifying me!

17th August 2015

Catching up with myself after last week. Never doing more than 3-4 interviews a week again.

After listening to MC and MS's interviews...I need to more appropriately propose my ideas and measure what I am saying. I do not think I need to explain every action that relates to my activities either. It's a bit too much; I am being too full on in trying to be helpful and transparent.

With regards to MS and the Red Tower, I do intend to help where possible as I do have connections and things I would like to say. But I will have to see. The email response from MC suggested that she is out of contact for a few days.

20th August

Just been interviewing [Hannah] in Walmgate Café and afterwards took some pictures of the a) the café and b) the Walmgate area. Reflecting on Tues 18th interview with [Betty] I can see the point she made about the local footfall; people on bikes, in cafes, in cars, in homes. Our side is a LOT quieter—without counting. I also went to see space 109. It is now part of SASH, a charity for homeless people. Looked like an office. Right next to Bowles house and the row of shops.

Thinking to what others have been saying, RT really is out of the way and this might be an issue. Talking to Walmgate café owner informally (though did mention I was researcher and would like to talk to him in the future maybe) he mentioned that it would be good to have more people come onto the walls. It did feel quite empty in there.

More and more I am feeling that if the project has direction, then it needs to be informed by local opinion and the 'scenes' of the local elsewhere. There was certainly a feel of 'hubness' and bustle outside the Walmgate café, but not inside. The décor inside...is lovely but I can't see how inviting it is for those outside...by this I am acknowledging there is a demographic in the area (see Vicky's interview) for which cool, quaint, artisan cafés do not necessarily appeal. Need to understand the situation on the ground to shape RT direction. But I think an amount

of digging too, and just hanging around the area. Maybe I could survey in place? It's important to acknowledge that social spaces exist that may impact or have bearing on what the Red Tower can become.

14th September

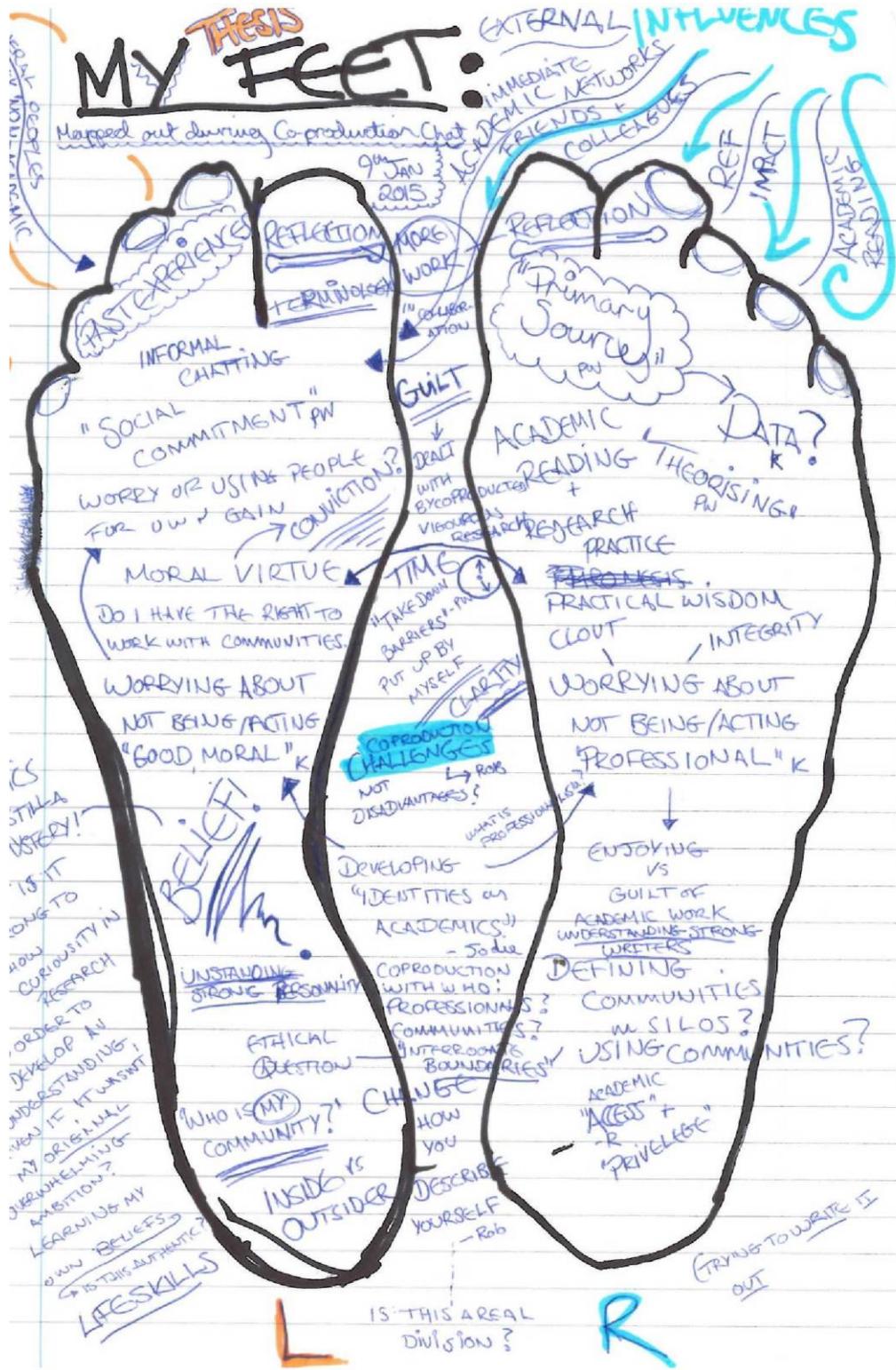
Ok having gone through the interviews, I know that the majority are mostly sound and very much follow (with deviations) the topic schedule I proposed. Some of them are a lot looser but I still find nuggets of information in there (place etc). But to account more thoroughly for the questions I want to ask the survey will be helpful at supporting the qualitative findings. I will do a more through data review next week in preparation for further interviewing (and CYC fieldnote taking) and eventually the survey. The sample group of the survey will be of interest then. But I need to get the interviews done first and then a proper data review to compile the survey design.

I have also today had a further think about the analysis and am confident that the value action maps can be done in line with the NVivo coding. It might be I must show them on NVivo first and then move over to something else, but I watched a video on the visualisation of data, and it seemed straightforward. The trickier analysis will be happening through the media. I need to work out first what I am referring to by media.

05/10/15

This week I have made multiple decisions about both the research and extra academic duties. Yes, these are becoming noticeably separate roles. But a third role is emerging: the professional persona. This is linked to the light bulb moment I had on Monday night concerning the Red Tower project. I put myself forward to take on part-time work as a consultant for the project in case they get the locality funding. And this has led to different doors opening. Harry has supplied me with a bunch of schemes and opportunities...But whilst this is great, I know I need to keep my head screwed on, keep focused on the PhD first and foremost. I need to get strategy in place to divide from researcher to consultant (bridge and

stream as John mentioned). Working out things on paper a lot this week as been helpful (doodling ability) and looking at older discussions (see below).



14/10/15 Red Tower Meeting Afterwards

So, I have been accepted by the Red Tower group as the person who can contribute to the heritage consultancy job role. Whilst last week I would have been brimming with anticipation that I could do it with their blessing, now I have an impending feeling that I am going to be crossing a line. I will be undertaking non-research activity. With a group that has been my case study a focus. I need to establish in words why I am taking this on. And where my PhD lies within this (will I collect data too...or will it simply be a way of making contacts? Or none of these: simply work).

And I will focus on these questions tomorrow.

20th Jan 2017

Thinking about the group interview with the council practitioners.

Have it a lot of ground in depth particularly on the subject of engaging others and some difficulties planning and place change initiatives such as the local plan and the planning.

In terms of the conversation flow and the way that different people interacted, a lot of the time it was respondents two and five talking about the local plan and the difficulty they face when interacting with others. But there seems to be input from three and four at several points in the conversation, often giving examples of best or better practice in engaging people. It would be relatively easy I supposed to actually count how many times respondents spoke. Do I really need to do this? Um maybe not. But at the same time I do want to show where different interests and experience are being brought in to the conversation.

One of the things that I have noticed and noted in my annotations is particularly with two and five seems to be shared knowledge and this is indicated by the amount of times they finish each other's sentences or interrupts each other. I think interruptions really show an interesting relationship between two respondents in that they like each other enough to be able to cut across their conversations and that they wouldn't mind. Respondent one didn't talk as much

but I get the impression that this was a lot of new staff to her and so she perhaps was listening more.

Perhaps it would be of some interest to visualise a key, something to show how much was covered in this interview by certain people from certain professional backgrounds... But it is not a priority of mine at the current time, considering my own time restrictions.

Okay so now my task as far as I can see is to produce a way of linking all of the different council practitioner interviews into a value action map. And I need to think about how these maps will bring out the data from the interviews, what exactly do I feel needs to be shown? So for instance will it be relevant and necessary to indicate that in this interview the group interview X amount of respondents were talking at X amount of time... I think the emphasis should be on where what department the respondents are coming from so as to indicate a spatial practice and identify certain concerns and values and visions. You need to be clear exactly what these are, what they consist of.

Reading these interviews is super interesting, so interesting I forget to code and get immersed in the conversation. So reading back up, scrolling up the page has helped a bit more focus on what's being said and working out where to code.

A.x Sifting the Moments (Meta-Data Section)

Each data source (fieldnote, interviews, media) provided a slightly different perspective of the fieldwork. To simplify:

--Fieldnotes generally captured active emerging moments or discussions in which I was present, in the thick of action with some insights into value-actions and vision. In some cases they form as 'recounted' actions.

--Interviews showed uttered value-statements, viewpoints and the roles of participants.

--Visuals offered a combination of value-active moments (like fieldnotes) and whilst offering us some reflexivity of the role and velocity (movement) of visuals themselves within action.

Thus, for each data source in chapter I have demonstrated why certain selections were made within the interpretation.

West Offices Fieldnotes & Interviews:

Because very little constructive accounts of action had been gathered during fieldwork (instead a view across several different domains was captured), a 'thematic' discussion was written which was structured to four of the key themes –values, visions, media, and locality. Data gathered from practitioners within the different domains had been coded to these four and the other key themes (such as challenges and collaborative action etc.). The four themes were chosen to structure the thematic discussion whilst the others were entangled throughout the data and therefore could be discussed within them.

In order to bring specific data extracts into the thematic discussion, simple coding queries were generated for each domain (e.g. by search for 'values' in all heritage and archaeological discussions). These coding queries are saved and labelled within the Value Action Media, as ways of gathering the coded extracts to different domains. They included numerous extracts of data snippets of relevant words and uttered statements from practitioners. These were sifted through and interpretative choices were made regarding which ones could be brought

into the text. Sometimes codes were found to be irrelevant and were decoded (generally thought to be due to broad brush coding technique).

West Offices Images:

The West Offices fieldwork generated 96 photographs (most of these were taken within the HER interviews): 12 from fieldwork were inserted into the chapter (including one image from the Red Tower place-theme). All 96 photographs had been coded and labelled within NVivo and coding queries could have brought these to the fore in order to make selections alongside fieldnote and interview extracts. The visual toolkit was applied to all of these to highlight all images' material life. The insertion of all media was led by relevance to the text at different stages throughout the chapter to reflect, exemplify and dig further into meanings, themes and actions discussed. I knew (from visual memory) which images would achieve this and these in some cases helped to with the grasp of the topic or theme at hand. Images also included web-shots—such images had been identified through contextual research.

Other visuals included charts which I had designed in order to exemplify aspects in the text or to short hand knowledge-sets.

Pre-2011 Asset Transfer Fieldnotes:

The fieldnotes detail the 'becoming stages' of the Pre 2011 Heritage Asset transfers and were gathered initially within face-to-face conversations between myself and trustees and edited over a period of several months over email or telephone. These eventually were compiled as a timeline, the 'key moments' and stages of the project having been identified by the trustees through my informal questioning. Thereafter I structured these moments rhizomatically into 'goals, catalysts and outcomes'. Often during the editing process of the moments and in conversations, the trustees would provide great amount of details and their discussion of previous events would jog other memories and insights or lay more or less significance on events, by no means in a chronological order. Even in recording conversations (as I did at one point) this was a difficult task and I often found my interpretation of their events fell short of 'how things were' in their minds. In the end the *size* of the timelines had to be taken into account and the words condensed into small boxes. I believe the participants found the

visual of the timeline a little obscure and hard to edit themselves however, they persevered despite being busy with the ongoing organisation of running their projects or other ventures. Their comments on the current relationship with the locality are held in the Chapter Six's Appendix (C).

Pre 2011 Asset Transfer Images:

Images included maps, web-shots and photographs which were inserted to exemplify and correspond to the 'contextualising the localities' and media section (the visual toolkit was applied to all of these to highlight the images' velocity). Such images had been identified through contextual research and through conversations with the trustees. Photographs were taken of certain documents which were presented to me by the trustees or whilst visiting the place-theme. None of these photographs were coded or labelled within NVivo. In some cases, images were discussed without being shown (due to the deluge of them within sources—e.g. Facebook or York Press Articles).

Other visuals included charts which I had designed in order to exemplify aspects in the text or to short hand knowledge-sets.

Red Tower Fieldnotes:

During the period of two years in which I had worked alongside volunteers, I had amassed around 100,000 words. I wanted to condense these into a 20,000 word text (as diaries). Following the methodological approach of coding analysis (as laid out in Chapter four) I focused on fieldnotes which had been coded to 'Changes in organisation' in order to bring out 'key moments' in the becoming stages. This still brought up 56 references within all fieldnotes, which of course were only segments of episodes.

Within the Walls (NVivo 11).nvp - NVivo Pro

Node Tools
NODE

Look for: Search In: 1.RED TOWER Find Now Clear Advanced Find

Coding Query - Results Preview

Coding Criteria

Search in: All Sources Selected Items... Selected Folders...

All of the following are true

Coded at: All Selected Nodes (1) Changes to organisation

Spread to: None

Name	In Folder	References	Coverage
1.2. April 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	1	3.18%
1.7. Sept 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	1	64.33%
1.9. Dec 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	1	7.65%
1.4. June 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	1	0.98%
2.7. July-Aug 2016	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	2	3.82%
1.1 Jan 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	3	6.13%
1.3. May 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	3	9.55%
1.8. October 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	3	21.54%
2.3. March 2016	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	3	2.22%
2.3. March II 2016	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	4	17.44%
2.5. May 2016	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	4	10.87%
2.6. June 2016	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	4	14.55%
1.5. July 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	5	5.50%
1.6. August 2015	Internals\\Fieldnotes\\1.RED TOWER	6	8.60%

KF 17 Items Sources: 16 References: 56 Unfiltered

02:10 PM 15/08/2017

Figure 1. NVivo Results of Coding Query on Red Tower Fieldnotes

I selected whole dated episodes (i.e. fieldnotes covering one day or other clearly demarcated time period) in order to make a cohesive narrative. This selection process was documented using a table (below) where I gave reasons for including certain extracts, which basically amounted to a weighing up the *quality* (impact) of the 'Change' on the progress. I then condensed the chosen fieldnotes by deleting and summarising passages where it was deemed appropriate in order to retain the 'Change' aspect of the

narrative. In addition, through sifting I decided other fieldnote episodes (not coded to 'Change') should be inserted because of their demonstrative quality of other impacting factors (and these reasons are also given in the table).

Table 4. Fieldnotes Selected for Red Tower Diaries

Fieldnote episode	Original Word Count of episode	How many coding refs to 'Change' within episode?	Additional reasons for inserting	Editing Notes
JAN 2015 (lead up to Red Tower)	1207	3	Introduction to the premise of the project	
21-04-15 Student Event Planning	685	1	Divisions across space, knowing the area	
11-05-15 Leafleting in Rosemary Place	378	0	Really strong sense of Place/Divisions across space	
12-05-15 Post student event Lilac Patricia	423	3	Changes to people power & structure—premise of pop-up cafe	
23-05-15 Spring Clean	577	1	Changes to people power & structure	
25-05-15 Red Tower pop up café	727	0	Gaining knowledge of Residents Association, Kids.	
30-07-15 Brigantes Tash	1592	3	Understanding other ways of managing a project	
30-07-15 Brigantes HOD meeting	869	0	Continuation of People power & structure in planning events	
08/08/2015 POP up café notes	904	1	New key volunteer	
22-08-15 Another pop up cafe	557	3 refs	Further changes to organisation as per new volunteer	29th afterwards could be a filler about the lights and getting

				rid of the wooden table!
02-09-15 El Piano Meeting	927	1 big ref	Major changes to the organisation due to Lack of time (challenges)	
Lead up to the Red Tower Advisor role	755	3	Changes again due to funding success	
12-12-15 Red Tower Christmas Event	991	1	Prelude to the floods and continuation of events as key ways of meeting people	
04-01-16 Flood relief organising	1141	1	Media and being shifted in a certain direction	Edit down
16-01-16 Flood relief Move	492	1	Meeting of new volunteer and change of Red Tower role	
03-02-16 Rosemary Place post floods	3000	6	Budding of another project in place and other residential conversations	Majorly get this down
11-02-16 Door Knocking	771	3	Learning how hard it was to door knock and applying appropriate methods	
16-02-16 More door knocking	500	1	Key event, change of Red Tower role again.	
20-02-16 flood-Photo competition event	746	2	Gaining of resources and new volunteer connections	
29-02-16 Reporting back—Feasibility Report	4615	2	Meeting Backhouse team, understanding the wider 'scope' of COMA funds.	
01-03-16 Reporting Back with Lilac & Priya	671	1	The pragmatic move from café idea, early impact of my feedback	

14-03-16 Impromptu meeting at tower	1480	1	Meeting of minds in the tower (and the divisions of space/place)	
19-03-16 Red Tower Workshop	3400	2	Stepping up of trustees	
22-03-16 Talking logos & kitchens	911	0	Considering other forms of best practice (i.e. logo) & demonstration of heritage expertise	
24-03-16 Meeting with Harry—how did the red tower get funding?	826	0	Considering the steps <i>taken in past</i> to allocate funding to Red tower	
29-03-16 CYC Meeting	2495	2	Reporting back to CYC and Locality, and other insights offered.	Might want to add stuff about the logo as a filler
11-05-16 Account of TCV funding	1180	3	Important for funding and residential relationships	Extract
14-05-16 CIO MEETING	327	1	Indicating change of remit for new Red Tower team	Extract
21-05-16 Red Tower/Rosemary garden	1197	0	Demonstrating some of the issues between Red Tower and other edible garden project	Shortened
22-05-16 Short trip to Red Tower	200	0	Chance meeting with anxious resident	
22-06-16 BBQ prep	442	1	Insight into our discussion on how to interact with people.	
25-06-16 Residents BBQ	5000	1	The continuation of People power in events and one new key volunteer.	
02-07-16 Chat with Libby	710	1	Later issues of lack of communication, negative perceptions of funding, position of new volunteer.	

06-08-16 Talking with Sally	618	0	Divisions across space, opposing views, finances.	
	TOTAL 41,314			

These fieldnotes then formed the Red Tower Diaries. All other fieldnotes were omitted from the data set and those which remained were coded again—both broad brushed and thereafter tooth-combed. The Red Tower Diaries are therefore the only data used to create the data visualisations shown in Chapter 7, however, as is clear in the chapter, sometimes the non-coded data-set is referenced to exemplify other relevant points in the discussion.

I shared a summary of the notes with the participants most prominent within them (along with photographs and interview transcripts via my secure website). I received no comments or additions back, only one person requested to see the notes in which they were included and they accepted these (and we had an interesting conversation about different interpretative viewpoints via email).

Red Tower Interviews:

Due to the mass of words here too, I developed a technique to include interview extracts in the Red Tower Diaries. These limited excerpts to an 'essence', one extract of roughly 200 words, out of every interview (all 18 of them).

This essence was determined by seeking data coded to the following themes:

1. Uttered Value and Value-action--in connection with Red Tower

2. Vision (including sub-themes)--in connection with Red Tower

3. Difficulties/concern (including sub-themes)

4. Roles (of the interviewee)

These themes were chosen as they would most effectively indicate the motivations of the participants alongside their knowledge set and capability or role within action, as was asked typically within semi-structured topic schedule. These themes indicate for each person the essence (or point of direction) of their value-action along with challenges that they come across.

I found these thematic themes by reading the individual interview transcripts in NVivo, 'highlighting' them through the highlight tab, and scrolling down the lines—hunting for the 'yellow strips' where the themes were coded. This step would often bring up several extracts in yellow. In attempting to weigh up the various extracts that resonated with the individual's intent/goals or perceived challenges, often I would find that I would have to consider a whole host of reasons for inserting one over the others. Sometimes simply, the choice was made because a particular extract was worded more clearly or more strongly—such as a reiteration of an idea which the participant had developed as the interview unfolded. Sometimes I would also see the benefit of including uncoded text or even my own input, to explain the premise of the preceding statements. But also, sifting through the interviews required me to simultaneously consider where in the narrative they would be placed. As the conversations were (for the most part) personal reflections on activities and drivers for action, they could not

be directly embedded into the fieldnote moments, as simple conversation for instance. I decided that the interview extracts could reflect certain aspects or views laid out in the fieldnotes, or even contradict them (see for example, Jake's Interview in Feb 2016). I placed extracts at the end of fieldnotes to establish this relationship between different data sets (gathered in different contexts). This step also demonstrated how although 'uttered statements' are spoken, actions may develop differently, thus helping to move beyond static 'soundbites'. This will be discussed further in Chapter Eight with regards to the research questions.

Red Tower Images:

Around 40 out approx. 160 photographs captured from fieldwork were inserted into the Red Tower Diaries, and this step was initially aided by another coded selection process. The photographs themselves were deemed to help to reflect on how collaboration was garnered between myself and other participants and value-activities in place. For these reasons, images that I'd coded to 'Changes', 'Values', 'Vision' and 'Collaboration Spectrum' were highlighted. 130/160 photographs were brought up.

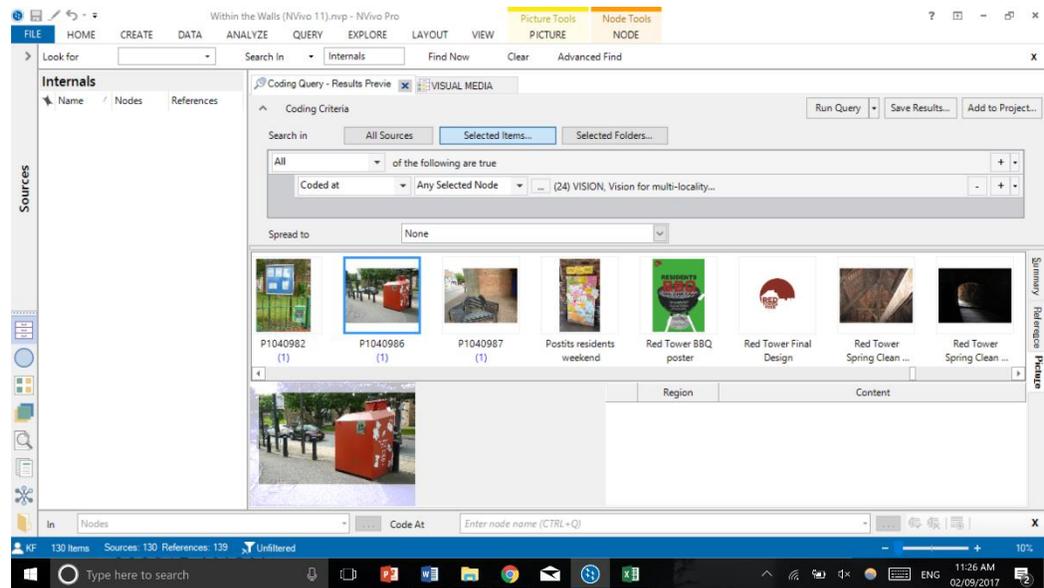


Figure 2. NVivo results from Coding Query on Red Tower Images

So as to narrow the selection further, I sought to bring the images alongside the narrative in a similar way as adopted with the interviews and made interpretative choices. In some cases,

photographs were inserted into the Diaries because they highlighted themes that had not been adequately covered in the fieldnotes or interviews. Essentially, a medley of reasons led to choices of photographs that depicted similar contents (sometimes they got across a message or demonstrated the theme in a nuanced or clear form).

Where an image has been inserted into the Red Tower Diaries, the reasons for the selections are detailed in Appendix G—the image archive. This highly bureaucratic step is also repeated for those photographs inserted at random into the main Chapter but those that were chosen for the purpose of contextualising the locality (i.e. images of maps or old photographs of the Red Tower). In all main text images, a visual toolkit was instead applied. Brief captions describing the contents of the images were written into the text in both Chapter Seven and Red Tower Diaries. All other photographs remained in the NVivo database, coded and labelled so as to highlight the velocity of the image and/or the visual media within that image.

Other visuals included charts which I had designed in order to demonstrate theming analysis or to present short-hand any other knowledge-sets.

APPENDIX B

B.i Neighbourhood Plan Process

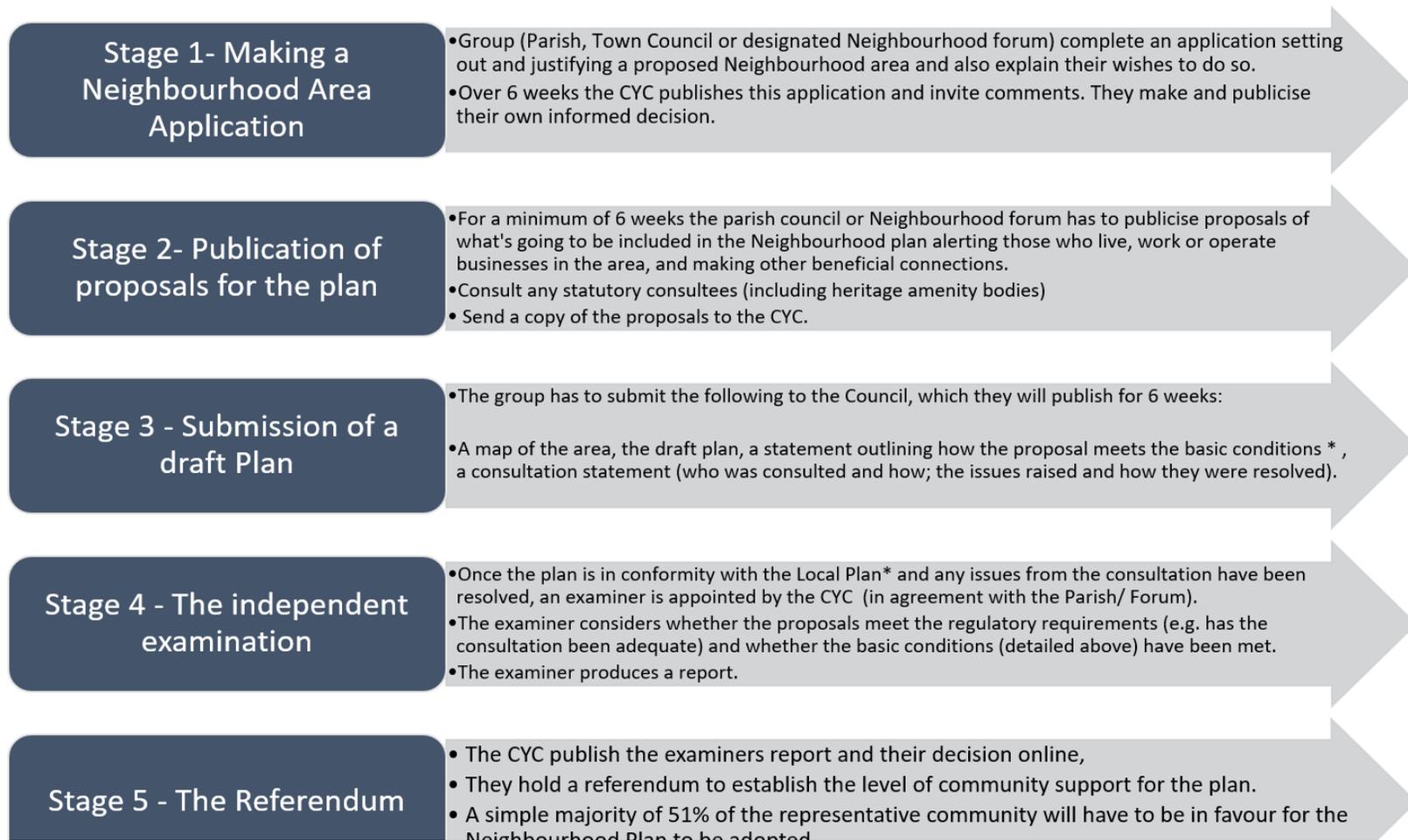


Figure 3. Neighbourhood Planning Process, adapted from CYC (2017i)

B.ii West Office Fieldnotes

1 **Fieldnotes I:**

2 **6th July West Offices—Introduction to West Offices Placement**

3 [Ahead of the meeting today, I sent Harry [DCSD] my information sheet to discuss as a way of
4 introducing myself as a researcher to workers at the council. We sit in the café of the West
5 Offices].

6 We discussed how the placement would work; Harry gave me information on next week's events
7 whereby I would meet [Gill] who is connected to a team which deals with 'local planning'. I was
8 informed that she also has connections to a project with several neighbourhood plans. I penned
9 into my diary to meet Harry and [Gill] for next Tues 14th, a potential meeting on the Mon 13th
10 regarding a neighbourhood plan and a further community lunch with [a communities
11 practitioner] on the Wednesday 14th.

12 I mentioned my priority to connect with 6 people or more who worked in different sections at
13 the council, in order to shadow their work activities (writing fieldnotes) and to do
14 interviews/group interview. Harry suggested we spend the next few weeks linking up contacts
15 within the offices at different levels of management too. We both thought about which
16 'sections' of the council would be useful to position myself within. Some ideas: community
17 worker [Mike], politicians (or somebody who knew how different parties worked) planning etc.
18 Harry mentioned a planning officer too [Max]. Mention of 'family tree' of practitioners—Harry
19 mentioned similar 'phone' map but not used anymore, and potentially in HR (could be a good
20 resource).

21 We then talked a bit about how the placement activity would work in terms of me taking part in
22 a project or work which could be of use to me in the 'future'. We agreed this could happen
23 organically through the research. I also voiced to Harry my interest in the HER project that I
24 understood he was taking part in with [Hannah]. (Background—had heard about the potentials

25 of HER through going to a forum on the subject, lots of different council groups, and have since
26 seen examples of participatory research utilising HER). Harry showed me through drawings
27 (complete with arrows and boxes) how the phases of the HER project were going to move
28 through, involving funding from HE and HLF, research with community groups and the goal to
29 technically set up 'interoperable' interfaces with other web-based platforms/interfaces. I voiced
30 my interest in the different stages.

31 We then went up to the third level of the West Offices to meet some of the DCSD team and so I
32 get signed up onto the Council IT portal. Harry showed me how to log into my new council
33 email inbox—he suggested that this could be a good way to contact other practitioners. Also, I
34 will be able to access the HER (or rather named the Historic Buildings and Scheduled
35 Monuments Record)—but I wasn't at the time 'signed up' into this system. We agreed that I
36 would come in the next day to have another go and get to understand its ways. After this, I
37 chatted to Hannah in the DCSD about HBSMR.

38 07-07-15 West Offices Harry HBSMR Chat

39 [This meeting was organised off the back of the preceding one on the 6th. I make my way to the
40 hot-desks section, where DCSD are situated and take a seat next to Harry's desk. We have a long
41 chat—almost a training session—which lasts about 2hrs.]

42 Harry explains that the current HER (also known as the Historic Buildings and Scheduled
43 Monuments Record-HBSMR) at the CYC is actually the product of a collaboration between
44 Historic England (then English Heritage) and the UK Royal Commission. (when??)

45 He refers to it as an old dinosaur which has evolved and continues to do so. It uses a data
46 structure called MIDAS (monuments intervention data standard). This standard is used by most
47 Council HER systems (regardless of different designs), HE databases and any archaeological
48 monument databases. The data structure enables interoperability between field names (it
49 searches across these) and *some* other sources. Museum and Archives do not share this system
50 (not compliant). MIDAS underpins all

51 [found this webpage on 15-07-15:

52 [http://help.cadcorp.com/en/7.0/sis/help/Datasets MIDASDataset.html](http://help.cadcorp.com/en/7.0/sis/help/Datasets_MIDASDataset.html) and

53 https://content.historicengland.org.uk/images-books/publications/midas-heritage/midas-heritage-2012-v1_1.pdf/].

55 The structure of HBSMR is created by EXEGIS. The structure of the HBSMR (the name of which
56 has changed to incorporate different focus on the historic environment) is informed by its
57 process which follows as thus:

58 First an EVENT is logged as a record—this essentially involves the logging of an archaeological
59 intervention.

60 Then what follows are the SOURCE records which details all the relevant material produced from
61 the EVENT (these are cross referenced)

62 After this a MONUMENT record is created which enables an 'interpretation' to be established of
63 what was found during the EVENT. This then goes into grey areas of the diversity of the term
64 'monument'—could be a cathedral or pothole. Leads to a questions of a hierarchy of
65 monuments and debates in archaeology. Although there are monuments potentially within
66 monuments (tombstones for example). Parent monument in this case would be the church.

67 DESIGNATIONS also feature as part of the HBSMR records: these are created by HE and become
68 layers onto of Monuments (can be several different forms of designations (SM, WH, LB etc)).

69 The structure of the platform is divided by categories on the left hand side which follow:

- 70 • Routines
- 71 • Monuments
- 72 • Events
- 73 • Sources

74 • Consultation (these are the most used)

75 (see images)

76 Harry and I digress onto the subject of designations which are sent by HE via pdfs when a
77 designation has been occasioned. These are then updated manually.

78 We talk about the Local List—local authority can choose whether to maintain a local list and
79 may publish a process in order to add to the HER.

80 In order to create a file either Building or Monument are selected as the record type (others
81 such as Character Areas haven't been used—although, seeing as there is a test record created by
82 [Hannah] and [previous Heritage Officer], it looks like this was tested up but not followed as
83 practiced.)

84 As I am writing these notes and drawings down we realise Harry is finding out things about the
85 HBSMR (like above) through explaining it to me.

86 He goes onto explain the analogous 'tree' set up within a record page which show the 'summary
87 of links' between different events (nt sources). When you right click and select details you open
88 another window on the other event record—will be titled EYO and then digits. This window can
89 also show potentially other sources through the camera image icon or the library link.

90 Harry describes HBSMR as an ICEBURG which is still growing in terms of structure and records

91 Heritage gateway (accessible to the public online) will give the monument records as updated
92 on HBSMR but not everything else (EVENTS/SOURCES)

93 (Our conversation and my notes are a bit sporadic).

94 Harry wants to share the data of the HBSMR with other sources such as OASIS (ADS), ESRI-'s GIS
95 server, Library link and other datasets in York (YMT, YCA, YPP) (see image).

96 Some of the Tabs on the records are unused and redundant (for example the valuing tab!)

97 Harry states that this was designed by the Monument Protection Programme (look up) and not
98 taken up as 'rational' exercise. Basically they tried to score the valuation of buildings into
99 statistical values set, so that a high score would lead todesignation?

100 Historic Landscape Characterisation has not been connected up and it's not an easy task.

101 Monitoring, Harry explains, is another underused tab which incorporates different sources and
102 events under one monument. I ask if this would incorporate duplicated material (or lead to
103 duplication?) Harry seems to think not, and I believe thinks this might be able to act as the
104 structure for the next steps for 'interoperability'.

105 [As we are using the platform, we've opened several windows. At one point we cannot open
106 anymore because the HBSMR has 'reached its memory limit'. SO must use the X to close window
107 when finished and not the 'close/back door icon'].

108 Harry discovers that the TABs change according to the record type (so there are no monitoring
109 tabs for buildings of merit, which have been really hard to find too).

110 Harry refers to HBSMR as a LABYRINTH. This is demonstrated by the opening of different
111 windows from the MULTIPLE EVENTS and Sources and DESIGNATIons links which can be
112 accessed from the [--] little window icons. But there is no 1 path to follow. (I would be tempted
113 to call this complex interoperability which is prevalent in some of the university websites...you
114 get links but there is no sense of narrative). Compare to Heritage Gateway, as Harry declares, it's
115 got usability and is intuitive (indeed I have used it before—searched bar convent).

116 Harry give example of sub-monuments LB 95 Low Petergate coversà MR Tenement 91-95 (Later
117 subdivided) Links to [Sarah Rees Jones source].

118 Now we move onto the GIS MAP.

119 Harry shows me the zooming and layers options (don't use scroll bars! Use eye glass-Hand tool)
120 EXEGIS info is located in a box on the right hand side (it is not very well signposted).

121 The historical maps do not align perfectly [I think this isn't really an issue as you can see that
122 they ARE juxtaposed periods and datasets].

123 I could have a go at puzzling out the HBSMR and maybe excavate it as part of a media
124 deconstruction methodology.

125 It may also be highly useful to consider a typology of online sources that are used in this
126 instance.

127 I ask what else Harry uses as a resource—google search, technical library (see photo). Grey
128 literature is now being scanned in.

129 **13-07-15 West Offices HER meeting**

130 Present:

131 [Hannah, Conservation Officer, Harry CYC and YE practitioners

132 Deleted as I said I wasn't going to use it as I hadn't gained informed consent at the time...but do
133 I really need to code this? It's basically an indicator that Harry was instigating conversations
134 about the HER, and that these continued and that the end product has been those pages that
135 are now available...not really getting ahead with it because it is complex.

136 **14-07-15 West Offices Gill Neighbourhood Planning (NP)**

137 [Harry has kindly sorted out this meeting as part of his helping me be introduced to the rest of
138 the DCSD team and those who work with them. We sit in the West Offices, on some sofas on the
139 third floor (near the 'hotdesks')—exactly the kind of meeting these sofas were made to provide!]

140 [Gill] explains that the status of the local plan (LP) is having an impact on the NPs, although it is
141 still emerging. Currently, there is no conformity between plans and there *could* be
142 disagreements between the NPs and LP. For example, both X NP and Y NP are against [aspects
143 of] local plan. This is difficult to work with.

144 In addition, at governmental level, Eric Pickles—secretary of state—has been making decisions
145 regarding the adoption of Neighbourhood Plans with some ambiguity. His decision-making has
146 been criticised. [e.g. [http://www.planningresource.co.uk/article/1346198/pickles-suffers-third-
148 neighbourhood-plan-legal-setback](http://www.planningresource.co.uk/article/1346198/pickles-suffers-third-
147 neighbourhood-plan-legal-setback), and
149 [http://www.planningresource.co.uk/article/1345762/high-court-delivers-fresh-blow-pickles-
neighbourhood-plans](http://www.planningresource.co.uk/article/1345762/high-court-delivers-fresh-blow-pickles-
neighbourhood-plans).]

150 Neighbourhood planning started out (newish process) in 2011. So far there have not been many
151 approved NP {check resource?} Their purpose is to work in support with the Local Plan and they
152 hold statutory weight—they do not duplicate it. As [Gill] mentions the NPs may be adopted
153 before the York LP, and when this emerges it will not supersede any adopted NPs.

154 [Gill] content-wise, the LP will form as an evidence-based report, whilst the NPs will gather
155 opinions via surveys that are carried out by the Parish Councils. These Parish Councils may omit
156 the views of, for example, big businesses. Herein lies an issue, in that these larger businesses will
157 be able to pull apart any NP that do not represent their views using their agents and legal
158 teams.

159 KF asks how the process of the NP starts?

160 [Gill] starts with an application for a boundary. The CYC is consulted and a response is given
161 within 4weeks. So far York has 10 NPs in process.

162 Once they've been delegated responsibility, the PCs start work through doing questionnaires
163 and surveys (essentially a consultation draft). They cover aspects such as land/space-use and
164 styles of architecture.

165 Some of these PCs will have Village Design Statements to support them (but these are not the
166 same sort of document and they not hold statutory weight—they are more informational).

167 The next step for the PC's NPs is the pre-submission to the CYC. The team then makes a
168 response—objections have been made so far with current plans.

169 Other aspects include the Strategic Environment Assessment (SEA) which is a key part of the
170 process. Quite a difficult piece of research to complete, and these have had to be sent back to
171 some of the ongoing NPs.

172 Historic England have been consulting with the PCs [Gill mentions Ian and Craig]. They advise
173 groups.

174 [Gill] some difficulty has been met with regards to the changing of the greenbelt in some NPs
175 and areas for planning development have been shrunk. Historic Character is also an issue.

176 Harry asks here whether there is overlap between heritage impact in NP and the LP (because he
177 had to write a bit about this). –{lack of notes: Can Harry clarify why there is a link here?}

178 After the pre-submission then other consultees relevant to the heritage sector (potentially
179 Council for British Archaeology) and other disinterested parties are permitted to comment on
180 the proposed plan. Furthermore, the CYC can support the contracting of an inspector in the
181 compiling of a 'Health Report'. Often this person will be a retired planning officer selected from
182 a national bank of candidates—[Gill's] team will make a choice out of 3 selected CVs. [Gill]
183 explains that the final Health Report need not be shared by the PCs with the CYC, which can
184 cause difficulties.

185 The NP submission will finally undergo an examination and a referendum. If it gains 51%
186 majority, the NP is adopted {Can Gill clarify who forms this examination?}

187 Harry brings up issue of Non-Parish or urban NPs—why aren't there more of these? [Gill]
188 explains that these can occur once a Neighbourhood Forum has been set up.

189 Harry Does this cause barriers to wards in the setting up of NPs?

190 [Gill] No these are treated in the same way at PCs once the NF has been set up.

191 Harry No ward areas can apply for NP?

192 [Gill] No too big an area

193 KF What defines too big?

194 [Gill] Ripon is an example of a NP which covers a whole town. But the issue with a ward is that
195 there are too many communities—not cohesive organisation. Read in the Press that Mickelgate
196 are considering setting up a NF (suggests that sometimes this is the way things work)

197 [Gill] offers a list of NPs (10 of them), and explains that some are further than others in the
198 process. There are some cases which are proving problematic.

199 KF When the NPs are accepted how are they accessed and how will they be adopted into
200 practice?

201 [Gill] Paper copies in the library and a website will be set up (in process currently).The
202 application will be included in the website. There will be a need to educate the DM-in order for
203 them to recognise status (they have more weight than VDS). Getting into practice might be very
204 useful in the absence of a Local Plan. Want to make sure that the NPs won't affect what we want
205 for the city {where does this strategy come from/reside?}

206 KF What are DM using now within practice?

207 [Gill] 2004 document for development management—which is out of date really {can I access
208 this for a browse?} Also done with policies: needs to be done with compliance with the NPPF.

209 [...]

210 [Gill] Consultation—staff at CYC are not clear what the PCs are doing; they do/{not?-clarify} have
211 to give a consultation statement afterwards. The CYC also give statements of community
212 involvement. In some cases the PCs are not showing what they have done. It is best practice for
213 PCs to show this. Currently not sure of the representation that the PCs could be achieving. CYC
214 involvement goes as far to show them how to do it, and do drop in sessions. The same
215 demographic turn up to these sessions. [Gill]'s team (once known NP is being proposed) do a

216 letter drop around the parish area but often do not get a response. Concern that families
217 potentially are not being represented.

218 [Gill] Leeds City region conference/event, in the future, forming of a representative of planning
219 officers and NP team workers in the area. Need to discuss key issues with the NP that are on the
220 go. {potentially interested in coming along to this, but need to think about data collection and
221 sample etc...could be part of ongoing shadow fieldwork with Gill?}

222 [Gill] One PC has excluded the university from its NP. This means that it will completely be non-
223 represented—no students or university members will be on the panel. It cannot be included
224 because it will not be able to produce its own NP—only PCs have the right to do this within a
225 specified boundary.

226 [Gill] Limited funding at the CYC means that not all NPs will be able to go through the process in
227 the financial year. Also CYC has a duty to support but where is the line drawn? Some believe it
228 would be beneficial to be more proactive, others see that PCs don't want the extra help.

229 KF Issues with consultation is a reoccurring theme here.

230 [Gill] Mentions [Betty's] community lunch—looking at best practice of consultation. This might
231 be of interest to KF {potential to attend}.

232 Also invites KF to Huntingdon Monday 27th July

233 When asked by KF [Gill] agrees that the Local Plan is Evidence based whilst NP is more about
234 community opinions. {this is perhaps another topic worth pursuing if much else to say on it}

235 **20-07-15 West Offices Harry Chat**

236 [After updating Harry on the research side of things with regards to better approaches I can
237 make to informing people of my research, we got on to the subject of the Red Tower (initially he
238 had mentioned this idea to me during the exploratory period and introduced me to Lilac—a key
239 transition in terms of my movements). So I switched to fieldnote-taking. Recently I had heard

240 from a co-worker at an orchard that I visit (for a leisure activity—but it resonates with my
241 interests in ‘green’ heritage) about plans for HISCOX to rebuild part of the city walls. I wanted to
242 know more].

243 In asking this of Harry, he explained that this was not the case but that they would be trying to
244 re-develop the pathway from the Red Tower round to the HISCOX building, and then back up
245 Peasholme Green.

246 {Check out press release and debates regarding the HISCOX building
247 ([http://www.yorkpress.co.uk/news/10557545.Hiscox_unveil_plans_for_new_landmark_office_build](http://www.yorkpress.co.uk/news/10557545.Hiscox_unveil_plans_for_new_landmark_office_building_in_York/)
248 [ing_in_York/](http://www.yorkpress.co.uk/news/10557545.Hiscox_unveil_plans_for_new_landmark_office_building_in_York/)) Nothing here about plans—might be able to check online planning portal:
249 [https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-](https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=MUEKMCSJ0A700.)
250 [applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=MUEKMCSJ0A700.](https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=MUEKMCSJ0A700.)}

251 Harry states that this will require new signage and potentially new interpretation panels for the
252 Red Tower. I am very interested at this point. Harry gives me the name of the original designer
253 of the panels [EC] who will be working on the new design too. I would like to get in touch.

254 Harry also mentions that there may be a “community asset transfer” meeting the next day
255 (subsequently cancelled). This would work out the feasibility work for Fishergate postern.
256 Funding will be required to do this. Business planning which then allows the community group
257 to take responsibility for the asset (interestingly, here, I am really wearing two hats, because I am
258 in a way part of this community? Although in a research position currently, my interest in the
259 Red Tower is not just for research purposes but also as a heritage management project with
260 great potential.)

261 Then we discuss further the idea of green and neglected heritage. Harry states here that the
262 value (with the orchard I visit) is inherent in the fact that nobody did anything to the place for a
263 long period of time—to an extent the same is true of York. There was no driver for demand and
264 then developments make them appear valuable. He gives the example of the [Poor Claires]

265 convent on [Lawrence st] (where there is also in fact a small orchard). This is being turned into
266 student accommodation with a plan that [the conservation officer] is happy with—
267 [https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-](https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=NR9M83SJ0CD00)
268 [applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=NR9M83SJ0CD00.](https://planningaccess.york.gov.uk/online-applications/applicationDetails.do?activeTab=documents&keyVal=NR9M83SJ0CD00)

269 Harry states that the sisters are still around: [Appleton Roebuck] on the edge of York {hinting at
270 potential case study}. A heritage statement has been given regarding the developments (which
271 is available on the Planning portal website)

272 I pick up on the idea of a 'Heritage Statement' although I confuse it with 'Statement of
273 Significance' (mention my prior MA example with Bar Convent). Harry explains that Heritage
274 Statement are given a part of the planning process (as good practice)—this doesn't necessarily
275 happen all the time (level of quality varies too). {my theoretical understanding of this means that
276 I feel that 'statement' of heritage is something really rather interesting—how these get utilised
277 too?! Do they articulate value? Do they contribute to the process?}

278 Statements of Significance are proposed through the NPPF and the National Heritage list {I need
279 to work on my understanding on this}. Statements are prepped by HE as and when required—
280 for designated buildings (only?) Harry suggests that no one has the time to write up SoSs for
281 every single building, only when revisions are made to buildings and when people are listing
282 building consent. SoS includes the concept of Conservation principles and the 4 values. Harry
283 relates that the [Know Your Place] team from Bristol were criticised by HE for moving away from
284 the notions of historical, aesthetic, evidential and communal value—but looked more at the
285 concept of people's experience of. [GH] has a draft copy which I might be able to grab, and
286 minutes off [Hannah].

287 **24-07-15 West Offices Mike**

288 I met with Mike after organising to talk through emails after emailing him with my invitation to
289 participate in research. we talk about how I could potentially follow his day-to-day practice and
290 he gives some instances into meetings and events that are local which I could potentially

291 participate in for example the Guildhall Ward planning committee. But it seems apparent that a
292 lot of his work is based at his desk writing emails he says that his work is like joining up the dots
293 between different people sometimes feeling like an octopus. Talking generally about how local
294 people get involved in heritage management Mike gives a bit more contacts into what else is
295 happening in the area. For instance he tells me that there are different surveys happening in the
296 area. This is in light of my own survey that I proposed I do with the participants of my research.
297 For example he mentions St Saviour Gate central Methodist Church are doing a survey in the
298 community centre in September. The traders association in Fossgate is also doing a survey in the
299 area. They are looking to seek opinion public opinion on the aspects of business improvements
300 and enhancement for the centre of York using the ring road as a locality. Mike offers that I
301 could potentially use the Residents Association AGM ballot paper which will be posted out to all
302 the residents as an opportunity to post my survey to the residents out for free. We talked about
303 how face-to-face surveys or door-to-door surveys are more difficult because those who are at
304 home will be a certain demographic. I think about how a survey around Walmgate area could
305 help to organise a focus group meeting using the hotel as a venue. We also talk a bit about
306 space 109 and a context of its failure. Notes are missing on this.

1 **Fieldnotes 2: 13-08-14 West Offices Harry and others**

2 I attended an interpretation planning meeting with Harry, Interpretation board designer, his
3 Assistant, Archives manager and another. Before the meeting starts I ask everybody if I am able
4 to take notes which will be incorporated into my ethnographic research. Everybody agrees.

5 The focus of the meeting today is the St Leonards place and to talk about the wall interpretation
6 panels. Harry says, "I have been given 7 and a half 1000 pounds for interpretation in a particular
7 house Style. Hiscox also propose to redirect the city walls trail so to encourage Walkers to take a
8 scenic route directed across the bridge and down Peas Holme Green. This will be around
9 November time. St Leonards on the other hand will take place in April. Victoria Hoyle has been
10 in contact from York Explore about the interpretation in a Mint Yard and the St Leonards
11 Hospital ruins".

12 Harry says "in order to not end up duplicating services and we've had a fortuitous meeting
13 which is enabled the Archives manager to attend today's meeting". Archives manager speaks
14 and agrees that they do not want to produce any interpretation that is duplicating or
15 contravening the council's work and they are also doing the interpretation at the site of the
16 Anglican Tower. Harry speaks about the tower and also other locations that could be possible to
17 do interpretation within the wider Mint Yard area. The interpretation designer asks about what
18 might be useful to do to is see if everyone is happy and bring together on a timeline to define a
19 brief. He would like to produce panels after looking at the locations. He asks if the city walls type
20 panel is the right kind of panel for the city walls and St Leonards place AND the Mint Yard area?
21 Also is listed buildings consent needed? If so to the latter question, he proposes they go down
22 the city walls approach and using a normal process with coloured glass which produces a pretty
23 resistant interpretation panel, resistance to vandalism. I then remember and voice noticing some
24 vandalism on the Red Tower interpretation panel which I noticed on the 7th of July.

25 The conversation continues on this track and Harry talks about the consultation with groups in
26 the surrounding area which helped to determine which interpretation panels and materials to be
27 used and they had chosen the highest quality. I guess we are not sure why they were vandalised.
28 Also in terms of listed buildings the fixtures of the interpretation panels were placed into the
29 joints which gives flexibility and sustainability in terms of fixtures. Interpretation designer then
30 talks about the design again and asks whether they can start from those same designs. Harry
31 seems to think that they can start again using the same designs off the city walls style.
32 Interpretation designer mention this is part of a family of interpretation panels across the city.
33 Thinking about if they can use a different size but still using the same typeface, the Archives
34 manager talks about using the same colours or different colour scheme to indicate different
35 areas of interpretation in the city.

36 The Interpretation designer also mentions new elements such as a different range of colours he
37 talks about how the company that originally designed the interpretation panels with were the
38 only company to use a ceramic technique material which is very expensive. He said he will look
39 at alternatives and give the team the pros and cons. There may be cheaper methods he says but
40 they might not last as long it depends on how long you want the interpretation boards to stand.
41 He asks if there is a potential idea of quantity and locations? The St Leonard officer suggest that
42 he looks at location plans (pulls out map) "Not many people know the history of St Leonards
43 place". The officer talks about St Leonards place and the Roman wall and Civic Trust plaque that
44 has been removed or stolen because it was bronze. He indicates that the particular areas for
45 having interpretation areas. I asked "did you chose this space because it is a busy space next to
46 the bus stop?" Harry mention that it's because this road is not visible to the human eye. The St
47 Leonards Planning officer also talks about the Abbey area. Harry mentions it is a complicated
48 area and the currently there is nothing to address all its stories or to give an instance of where
49 GG Andrews died and there is nothing to speak about the buildings themselves. Interpretation
50 designer mentions that it might be worth making a marker of the invisible Road. Harry talks

51 about the Civic Trust plaque he also talked about the HLF bid for the conservation areas a while
52 ago there was an option appraisal for the treatment of the area and to address the conservation
53 and behavioural problems in the area. He refers to young people visiting hanging around the
54 area and taking drugs. They introduce different walkway options and adaptive reuse of the
55 building would be really good to look again at those and lots of money in the HLF.

56 The Interpretation designer mentions that it sounds like this is a longer term Project. Harry
57 agrees and says it will probably take 5 year's work. The Archives manager suggest that there are
58 options for locations. Interpretation designer goes back to the map and asks what location?
59 Archives manager show what he has had in mind for the Mint Yard (everybody looks at the map
60 laid out on the table). Archives manager basically said that this area near a corner would be
61 good. Harry says the current panels in the city walls give a huge amount of info for the area.
62 How much info can one put on an interpretation board? Archives manager would like to
63 interpret the history of the building and stories but it's hard to bring the two together. Not
64 mention that there is a limit to what you can tell and how to get people to come inside and
65 draw them into the building. Archives manager mentions the use of a QR code. The
66 interpretation designer says this is a bit of a barrier also it will indicate different timescales
67 because QR codes are potentially easily made obsolete with expanding progressing technology.
68 What level of information you want to survive is important, otherwise maybe it can be
69 transitional? Archives manager suggest that he would prefer to have more permanent
70 interpretation board. Interpretation designer answers that in this case both the city walls and St
71 Leonards need something maybe more permanent. Harry talks about St Leonards hospital again
72 and the library and theatre in might be tell another story told in another way without using the
73 long-term interpretation boards. Harry talks about the general story of development the story of
74 the library, and the story of Jeffrey Radley the archaeologist and stolen bronze plaque. The
75 interpretation designer talks about different style? Harry says this might fit. But he wouldn't
76 want to confuse things. The Interpretation designer says it makes logical sense to have different
77 forms of interpretation between different areas. He states a simple proposal is that they create a

78 brief sketch of the interpretation panel in this style, giving a costing the context so everybody
79 can see the composition. St Leonards Officer asks if the Interpretation designer can make this
80 accessible so everybody can see it (the same goes for Hiscox). Interpretation designer says he
81 will sit back and wait what happens with Hiscox. St Leonard officer says he will see what
82 Interpretation designer brings to table he suggests that it will not be time consuming. Harry
83 suggests that the information can be easily worked out through conversations with SAM
84 inspector to the buildings in and sustainable flexible way which means of listed building
85 consent. Interpretation designer asks who will be installing, will we have our own contractors or
86 others? Harry said they have an ancient monuments team who could do the work and have
87 been part of the Minster engineering. The interpretation designer seems to think this is a good
88 idea. St Leonards Officer and Archives manager leave the meeting after hearing about the yard
89 and St Leonards Hospital.

90 I chat with Interpretation designer about interpretation planning and the requirements for him
91 to produce good pieces of work. He says it's what we do, what we can we find out, who's it for,
92 what's the context, and format of a design brief and then find out the significance of the site
93 and the context of the stories. When Harry comes back we talk about the Hiscox office. This is a
94 new direction for footpath walkers which is a great idea, Interpretation designer seems to think
95 so too. Service will be creating a new router cross the City Walls, to the building around the
96 Fosse. Interpretation designer says the device to lead can be either Fingerpost or part of the
97 stud locations in the pavement. Harry said this is going to be a scenic route with panels
98 identifiable e he's got from a building again how can we deal with that sits in the night if it's in
99 the style of things. We talked about how the Fishpool could be brought into Context it because
100 you would be stood in the Fishpool if you were walking past that part of the city 100 years ago
101 or more. Interpretation designer says that we could use this current studs and redesign with the
102 fishes, although that will be fantastically expensive. Harry says he's not sure of the status of the
103 public pathway and Hungate Development I mention the black swan and talking to people
104 there. Harry says yes there'll be a new street and a new lane will probably go straight past the

105 pub. Interpretation designer says about stone it was set within the infrastructure. Harry notices
106 that is long life and not fading part of the family style ceramic material. Then we wrap up the
107 meeting.

108 25-08-15 West Offices George

109 [I met George initially on the 6th of July after talking to Harry in my induction day to the
110 placement at the CYC offices. He seemed pretty keen to chat again and we talked via email
111 about chatting further about the historic environment and strategic planning. I wondered
112 whether my research would fall in line with what he is wishing to discuss because essentially he
113 is interested in planning in terms of the economic values.

114 I think it is worth me having a chat about things that could lead to something interesting so this
115 is not an interview but a chat. But he has said I can use these notes].

116 We meet in 1 of the rooms he's booked--its a big office with a long table. We both sit. George
117 starts to tell me about his team, of the design conservation sustainability team and the planning
118 team and that he manages both of these.

119 He talks about how his team are always thinking about how heritage and built and nature will
120 affect future local plan and how does heritage affect the way you plan a city. Talks about the
121 local plan a bit more and about the stages of preferred options and an executive plan. "The plan
122 is to achieve the vision of the plan". He says that this is lost on a lot of politicians the spatial
123 strategy to achieve that vision involves incorporating evidence and how heritage does affect
124 that Vision. He draws my attention quite specifically to the Local preferred options local plan
125 map (which is on the wall). He said this is the Vision but sometimes it is seen as paying heritage
126 lip service.

127 York has heritage assets and this is a strategy that is worth pursuing. Best practices are noted. If
128 designing a building in surrounding buildings looks like this then the perimeters have to reflect
129 that building a new pack of York and a new piece of York is very difficult in this respect. He

130 showed me some parts of the local plan and different sections which will focus on spatial
131 planning and different parts of the process a lot of different aspects are involved in this. He talks
132 about printing out the cake slices like cutting a slice of the cake in terms of use and priorities,
133 which seeks the vision. Strategic priorities can be drivers like housing or on the other hand the
134 shaper which is the historic assets. These need to be in balance. Historic buildings educate and
135 give character into an area but also as soon as areas are constrained, in developer's eyes this can
136 be seen as a hurdle or a buffer. In development they are calling for sites brownfield sites and
137 they've got an 800 responses from Farmer's and landowners. These are then filtered down into a
138 point on a map the historic environment taking into consideration and shift it against
139 sustainability. We talked about how heritage is affected by the future plans and whether the
140 processes of weighing up the different priorities are subjective; if there is nothing absolutely
141 expert. We talk about this issue of subjective and objective viewpoints in terms of philosophy, he
142 said he understood from a qualitative researcher's point of view.

143 I still don't really quite understand what George would like for me but he seems interested in
144 talking to me and that I should talk to him. He sends me an email later on with more details of
145 the local plan. I think he would like me to write an article on this subject focusing on York and
146 how the processes are being handled at the CYC which might be helpful to politicians.

147 **25-08-15 West Offices Harry**

148 I meet up with Harry, doing my placement work at the CYC offices. We discuss the second half
149 of my placement after 2 months of data gathering. It's apparent to me that I would like to do
150 more field note-taking and hands-on work. I am looking to do some more work with the historic
151 environment record as I had discussed the 6th of July Harry proposes that I can write a report
152 considering how the past and present community group can be incorporated into the HER. This
153 involves considering the York Past and Present (YP&P)'s relationship with the press. This is
154 because the York P&P group have been using photos from the archives off the Internet. Stage 2
155 of this would be a strategic process to Quality assessment how they would feel about being

156 brought into the HER format. There are issues here about what YPP think about doing this, how
157 it can be done and whether link can the heritage environment record to YP&P in some way.

158 Harry suggests I will need to dig out the copyright issues between York P&P, York evening press,
159 and the historic environment record and work out how to download between a monument's
160 record and events record and a source record century scoping out the feasibility of bringing the
161 two sites together. Could talk to Peter Brown about how to access public archives and how we
162 can give images a more secure digital life maybe talk to Mike and Vicky Hoyle, and other people
163 who I have contact with in my research life. York P&P have a picture gallery and the URL is not
164 associated for individual photographs but rather their own gallery website

165 We need to look at what photos YPP have taken for the Mansion House, the Guildhall in a
166 library and so that the York P&P work is not lost. Need to email Sean, YPP & a Wikimedian
167 contact, York Evening Press, Peter Brown (Civic Trust). The other things we need to think about
168 as part of my placement indeed CYC offices is to consider doing a survey on the city walls which
169 could be undertaken by myself and maybe a team of students from placement. I need to scope
170 a document together as one of survey on the walls. 12 months etc.?

1 **Fieldnotes 3: 14-10-15 my designs west offices**

2 Just been bimbaling around the HERITAGE GATEWAY site because I cannot get into the HBSMR
3 for reason. I will have to ask Harry.

4 I am now (with my report for placement hat on) scheming to find out the comparable ways that
5 the HBSMR can be accessed. Heritage gateway has been highlighted as a feasible way for
6 people to get access to information. (visually appealing and centralised search bar access
7 including a map). But it also links to many other different databases (list in report). And to other
8 Councils databases or accessible websites.

9 York's HBSMR is not on there but will have some of the monument records (see 07-07-15).
10 Came up yesterday in the group interview that HE consultants do not have access to the
11 HBSMR. And Harry's wish is that it becomes available to York Past and Present...knowledge is
12 power (12-10-15) Hannah's idea to have wardens also important.

13 So, there is a notion to clean up data and make it accessible. Within this collaboration I am
14 placing myself in the position of report researcher seeking feasible ways to link YPP and HBSMR.

15 AND SO, because I can't get access...

16 Heritage gateway.

17 Seems simple enough but the search engine can be made more advanced.

18 Do I have access to find out how many people access the HG? Drafting an email to their email
19 address.

20 Interestingly asking for quantitative data...hmm. Is this because I am a CYC data analyst now?!

21 I am also intrigued by the fact that there are lots of different websites from the councils of
22 public HER databases. Will compile a list I think and send to myself online. Along with national
23 datasets.

24 **15-10.15 SKYPE HER CHAT Sean**

25 [Have known Sean of YPP for some time through the work by HG (exploratory period). Met on
26 18th August too to talk about Red Tower (needed some help). HF has also been working with
27 them on several things (including hutments photography). I was asked by HF on 25-08-15 and
28 again on 6-10-15 to seek ways in which HER could be amalgamated with YPP and to write a
29 report on this. We organised to talk (over several days) and ended up agreeing to do skype so
30 Sean didn't have to get the bus in (my suggestion)—both of us admitted that we hardly ever use

31 skype but we are both busy! Sound quality was ok, but my vision wasn't great. YPP have their
32 own archive and I am to seek out questions of feasibility of bringing them together.]

33 Explained to Sean my task of writing a HER report

34 Harry had explained to both of us separately about HBSMR. Complex labyrinth.

35 Proposal is to integrate SITES somehow. Sean explains his interest but says he and Ness are
36 getting more and more complicated stuff. As an example, he's received blue prints to
37 Skeldargate Bridge. Shows me. Stuff on printed paper. Different materials come in different ways
38 (and so copyright will be acquired through different ways).

39 • Photographs in brown envelopes get posted through their door (do these have
40 copyright agreement?) Scanned in. Private photographs are then logged in a database.
41 Sean can find them quickly—but maybe not easy for others accessing the YPP database.
42 Can't do it via the YPP website?

43 • Digitised 700 pages of Mansion house. They want own copyright of have to sign
44 paperwork. Hold the pictures to silverware. Signed a waiver. Had to sign over copyright.
45 So, these are all in the database with copyright.

46 • Yorkshire evening press photographs are still copyright to the evening press. Custom
47 made for what they needed catalogue numbers. Hard to work through and need to log
48 on. York Evening Press archives opening going to digitise with York Explore (VH). Not
49 sure when this is happening (in the future). VH might be somebody to speak to.

50 • Facebook photographs are downloaded. If Sean and Ness have seen a photo which
51 they've never seen before, they'll approach the 'poster' and then contact them with
52 permission.

53 Don't need full copyright unless for commercial purposes. HER and YPP are not commercial
54 purposes. Photographs. Easy. Copyright. Retains to the original owner if publication. No charge.
55 The council do charge for people to access the HER. Not actually for the picture itself though.

56 YPP 'cloud' has been purchased. YPP is expanding and they don't want to lose everything
57 they've collected. Making it easier. Sean explains they will be uploading all images that they
58 have copyright for into the cloud, so it'll be easier to search.

59 Now I move onto the subject of seeing if the Facebook group conversations can be used as a
60 'resource' of community value and information concerning the memories of buildings.

61 Sean explains that Facebook group due to copyright reasons is a closed group. Private group
62 (private conversations). Permissions needed to circulate photographs.

63 With regards to searching it for key terms (as a research resource) Sean says it's impossible to
64 search Facebook with key words. Skeldargate. Solvable as long as you knew what you would be
65 looking for and were open about it.

66 Every York sites specially the showing the old pictures.

67 Involved in stuff. What is York past and present? History group AND community? Three different
68 community online and offline fb group and offline group: it's an amalgamation of different
69 things.

70 I also bring up the idea of a Heritage warden (from Hannah's suggestion). Does he think that
71 there might be some people who want to help work on the HER, cleaning it up, maybe sorting
72 out the connections between HER and YPP documents? He thinks there would be a lot of
73 interest in helping to use HER. Modern way of looking at things interest in looking at things they
74 are not normally given access to.

75 Gives example of an old factory more fun to look at than museum. We talk about urban
76 exploration; problem in his view are the vandals. Help themselves to stuff. Gone back to
77 buildings and been found. eBay ends up. Objects. Graffiti. That's why it's hated by the institution.
78 Us and them. Cannot go. Easy to understand why. Urban exploration. Civil matter. Legalities you
79 can argue. It's about control. This belongs to us. People at the council to do with the guildhall.
80 No right to be there.

81 Sean comes back to HER which is to be accessible to everyone. Always people who could to
82 help. See if there are any interests. Sourcing everything and organisation. 12 professional
83 photography. One room. Can't always afford to do it on your time. Disorganization of it all.

84 Talk turns to Red Tower which I have spoken to Sean before now (18 August Multi-local notes).
85 Needs to get message out. One percent of York. Mentions something to do with a TV show
86 (starting in January)! Bit of a cross-over here.

87 **27-10-15 West Offices my reports**

88 Working on HBSMR Report today. Need to focus.

89 Got here early. Greeted by friendly colleagues Gill regarding a social event in December. Found
90 free desk at the end (never sure which one to sit at!) and set up my laptop. Have brought my
91 own tea mug today too. Need to find the balls to serve tea to everyone! Have to move rucksack
92 for those who walk past the end desk to move through to speak to people. TV screen that Claire
93 is on is turned off. The video wasn't working anyway (really slow and weird and cutting out) so
94 maybe that is why?

95 HER Stuff ok. Need to work on wording. Spoke to Harry a bit about it. Getting sense of push.
96 Some aspects of the report can't be completed yet because it involves data that comes from
97 Heritage Gateway and this can't come through yet.

98 Feel a bit concerned about the tabulations here (qualitative or quantitative issue) does this
99 apply? I'm making qualitative comment on it at least.

100 Also, do really need to chat to YPP about their database again...is it publicly accessible?
101 I wonder how different these fieldnotes are from my Red Tower notes?

102 Want to buy cakes tomorrow! want to make gesture and feel normal.

103 Sat in the cafe bit typing up notes, feels like a better space to do so. Less distractions
104 immediately around me and therefore less of the dazzle

105 Advisor's comment at tap about the spatial arrangement of CYC (structuration) interesting been
106 on my mind, the structure of it (adopting York place names) might be worthwhile documenting.
107 Photographs? Maybe tomorrow. But I want to focus on Babel in terms of communications to
108 OUTSIDE west offices.

109 Need to consider that my research is me adopting areas of work within certain groups but not
110 everything within this group. Does sometimes feel a bit cursory that I am missing out
111 something. Also, the bugging feeling of not managing to get within local groups. Easiest path
112 within timeframe CDA format?

113 **28-10-15 West Offices**

114 Bit of day...Good to do this though. Southgate report recommendation from the previous
115 heritage officer after a lecture this morning.

116 CYC raining so hard can hear through the drains. Came to meet the MA students who will be
117 taking on the placement as part of the MA. Harry sat them down with me at the pink sofa.
118 Discussed what the aim of the placement would be. Mentioned the city wall survey.

119 I explain that I haven't yet thought through the questions that need asking. Use of iPads
120 potentially. Harry then cuts in need to ask if they are comfortable with this? Nodding from both.

121 JH need to sort out date. After a bit of confusion (in my own head) understand that the girls are
122 both free from 3-4 Dec and then both free 11-15th Dec (might be able to do some weekend
123 stuff) Harry and I have a side-line chat about the element of the walls (different sections? how to
124 this? more people needed potentially). I feel a bit odd as still don't have this under wraps! Harry
125 wants to count walls gives estimation of million from visit York Stats. Also, then mention the
126 work they could do via the HER forum. Harry explains the difficulties with this as he did with me.

127 Then conversation turns to social (funny situation with hot desks and postcards being moved).

128 Then end.

129 I need to have a proper sit down with them to explain the research aspect. Harry enjoying

130 having people to talk to about heritage.

131 Harry and I chat a bit more about walls. Qualitative and Quantitative—George doesn't think

132 much of qualitative Harry says. I say I want quantitative too but he wants demographics. Maybe I

133 don't need to do a survey for myself? Maybe just do it for CYC and then comment on how they

134 want to use the data. But I will be acting as agent for them? Level of reflexivity here.

135 He seems keen. As ever I am a bit confused about my role here. Want to do the walls but maybe

136 just don't and act for CYC.

137 I really want to talk to someone at the Department about this.

138 Where does my research start? In analysis? CDA has embraced me because I was willing to be

139 involved

1 **Fieldnotes 4: 09-11-15 West Offices**

2 OK so I've been focusing on the HER report. Sat in Conservation officer's seat as it was pretty
3 busy in the hot desk section of DSDC. Not sat on that side before, sat next to the boss (who later
4 offered me tea!) Obviously, it is a bit side specific. I did tea last week and cakes but it wasn't that
5 busy. Missed out Mark. but we had a joke about it. That was last time I was here. Everyone
6 smiled when I offered but sort of unexpected smiles.

7 So yeah busy feeling today, some people getting up and walking talking. A lot of sitting and
8 typing

9 Maybe I can go back to interviewees to ask about how much they work in place? What they do?

10 Need to ask Mike. And Harry about how the HER gets used.

11 Can't get computer to work, neither sign in to the CYC portal nor the Microsoft excel are
12 working.

13 Spoke to Harry about the HER stuff. Felt awkward as I interrupted his lunch...gave him the City
14 Engine booklet. He mentioned that's what happened with Boston... He seemed pleased to talk
15 about it, got up to find the GIS guy (who wasn't at his desk). Spoke about AOC contact who I
16 met at the CHAT conference. Another connection for Red Tower. But somehow not quite sure
17 about...whatever, might have just been bad time. Or the fact I mentioned planning and
18 consultations? Need to work out were my research questions lie in relation to CYC DCSD
19 intentions.

20 **25-11-15 Matt Jones**

21 [I know Matt Jones through the Department, but having left he has pursued another career
22 which involves data management for cultural heritage. We meet at Brigantes. It is noisy but I
23 take notes].

24 I explain what Harry and I have been discussing in regards to the HER (YPP and HER).

25 He suggests about the inputting of data into the HER as "the tail that wags the dog". He
26 continues: Number of problems with this approach.

27 This method is throwing work (a lot of it) at something that you don't know what you want out
28 of it. Clear outcomes? Need to do plumbing at the right level.

29 Making sure data is in the right format, and it's is gonna talk to other. There is a data silo all over
30 York. HER talks to HG

31 API see image.

32 He starts to draw on paper his ideas, explain how different data sets have contained within hem
33 the data, the structure and the format). He mentions Leodis. Data (info) structure (organised)
34 format (design) all tangled together

35 Facebook is a different structure. Data and structure (lives on top) formatting is changeable.
36 (Front end and back end)

37 Can change depending on Internet changes.

38 York heritage datasets have different structures. YMT is trying to layer things up. Community
39 commenting for example (layer on top).

40 DATA is at bottom talks to image. Public front end. Allows commenting

41 Application Programming Interface (API)

42 Heritage warden idea is bananas. Have to consider transparency. Security. CYC have legal
43 obligations to maintain data. Know Place is a layer over the top.

44 The big fantasy is to have one front end...for whole of York! See image. Heritage portal which
45 would tie these all together.

46 Problem is that you have to make all of these talk to each other.

47 This has come up before: I ask why are we at the point again?

48 William KilBride. Technology grows scale complexity and expectations. Know your place is
49 setting the bar.

50 Build layer on top...front end.

51 There have been lots of bad off the shelf solutions. User experience is forgotten. The mentality
52 of "if they build they will come" doesn't apply, one really has to really make interface has to be
53 as good as google in order for people to use it.

54 What are you actually enriching? Don't make a tool without consulting community. The "if you
55 build it they will come" mentality is not good.

56 I ask a bit more about the 'fantasy' of York—whether he thought it would be possible.

57 The fantasy would be great. All have APIs talk to York. But have to plan for the "front end".
58 Pulling together different planning portals.

59 Fantasy is that each data has an API that is communicable. All have front end, but also define
60 between a front end for residents and a front end for planning (they're not there to try to make
61 friends!)

62 Matt give examples of the Richt museum and BM design.

63 Richt makes data all accessible just need to know your way around....but they have guidance.
64 Meta data schemer if your computer author (author field looks like this).

65 Move onto IPR. All photos copyright CYC.

66 Matt Jones has been having discussions with the Media City group.

67 And also has insight into the OPEN DATA INSTITUTE spin off in Leeds.

68 Tied into the council.

69 Open government license. ODI encouraging government agencies to release data. Haven't
70 insisted heritage data though. If HER were to be released it would be a good way to go.

71 Matt recommends also that the CYC TALK TO ADS GUYS!! Who have been trying to pull
72 together all HERs at a National level!!!

73 Other legal requirement? Will images be copyright to the CYC?

74 Matt says the task long term would require an IP AUDIT. Nightmare of a task, and mentions the
75 granularity of IP. He says that it begs the questions of whether you have to provide
76 copyright....for everything?

77 Matt discusses a program call data mining (more sophisticated searching) TOOL

78 Data miner is a more advanced search and will 'talk back', will build connections for the machine
79 to find afterwards. He discusses Fishergate, which could be searched and then all data brought
80 up from different sources. Basically semi automating the linking of the data. Intuitive. Building
81 machine to build a better mining experience.

82 Really "semi automation"

83 Community quizzing through searching. ...is this intuitive? Allowing there to be space and
84 human engagement.

85 Building the plumbing allows people to do interested things to the water. At the moment, none
86 are sustainable, compatible or sharable across datasets.

87 End of notes

88 **23-11-15 West Offices**

89 The HER report. Well it's not ethnographic research: it's action? Its highly relevant to the use of
90 images in the public domain. It may be a highly interesting case study.

- 91 But I will during my "short term" ethnography, have to ask some direct questions.
- 92 How do Harry, Hannah, Mark and Gill use images in their practice?
- 93 Can I go back to this via the documents they have given me? Yes!
- 94 May not have as much ethnographic material as the red tower...but I will have to say well,
95 access was an issue. Harry can help me out right? More meetings please?
- 96 OK make some time to do this. But finish the HER RPORT and start and finish the wall survey
97 first.

1 **Fieldnotes 5: 07-12-15 West Offices Gill Neighbourhood planning**

2 KF: what are the stages of Neighbourhood Planning? (Gill to send report with example).

3 Gill: CYC advisers first meet with initial parish council who are interested in developing their
4 Neighbourhood Plan.

5 KF: is there a use of maps?

6 Gill: Yes for the initial boundary application. The application goes public (via website, physical
7 notices emails). Then followed by a decision session. Now having to go straight to a councillor
8 who makes a decision. Then PC start the consultation with public, through survey collating.
9 Mainly text.

10 KF : Use of photographs or maps?

11 Gill: Might show images in order to sabotage a development site plan and in order to
12 demonstrate how nice their area is. And PC may use a whole map to identify housing sites.

13 At this point the PC may be advised to do a SEA report. Statutory bodies and NGOs, amenity
14 groups are also contacted (Historic England). The PC then begin drafting the document with any
15 allocations of housing sites. A draft is produced [Gill give examples of XPlan and Yplan] There
16 are issues with both of them and they have been poorly written, but covers most of the
17 information required. They show nice photographs. Illustrates that it's a nice place.

18 KF: Issues with CYC adviser position?

19 Gill: [We] should not help them to physically draft the Nplan, but can give advice on elements
20 for example, land use, service facilities. Things that can be impacted. We are working with them
21 throughout. Need to ensure Nplan is usable and not some wishy dream policy that could never
22 be applied. We help them with the evidence, and have to demonstrate why they've chosen
23 certain space for housing allocations.

24 KF: What evidence do they use? Are maps used?

25 Gill: They can use council evidence base. Map bases can be given. Some issues with copyright
26 however, they have to have a license from OS. They need to have a GIS map base. Then they can
27 draw boundaries on them. We can provide GIS layers and then share those layers.

28 [...]

29 KF: What is Locality?

30 Gill: Locality are central government body part of the DCLG. Locality is working on the ground
31 and providing guidance for local authorities. But there is no guidance for PCs on how to present

32 a Nplan to the public. Fairly fluid form. We are advising to seek SCI (Statement of Community
33 Involvement) format. Most take this on board and use that to shape consultation. Always,
34 people do it wrong. But if use SCI the idea is they protected from CYC criticisms.

35 KF: Mention of a toolkit in group interview in October?

36 Gill: Tried to do but internal resources meant it has not come to fore, and there is excellent
37 guidance already out there, no need to really provide more. Provide instead a service level
38 agreement. Break down different stages between parish and Council, and aim to match
39 expectations. Limited numbers of meetings. This document outlines all legal obligations.
40 Essentially there is a job to do. To advise and assist. Duty. Can't be seen to go beyond this.
41 Nothing we could write to add to guidance out there (locality). Meeting expectation to give
42 18hrs per plan in theory. Doesn't match sometimes though. Sometimes it is useful to meet with
43 them more.

44 KF: LOCUS consultancy did workshop/focus groups. [Discusses the report]

45 Gill: Never be council role to provide it. Parish council could do focus groups. Beyond call of
46 [CYC] duty. PCs should provide a consultation statement and should make out the methods and
47 data. Otherwise CYC has no way of checking. E.G.. Have shown in our version of the local plan x
48 number of responses. PCs have got to show that they've listened to what people have said. They
49 need to keep a records of how they delivered to house for example can't just said they did a
50 survey. So we inspect that they have effectively surveyed to the best of their ability. Focus
51 groups quite hard to record what has been said. Whole data protection issue is applied to them
52 as well.

53 END

54 **11-12-15 The City Wall Audit**

55 I produced an audit of wall through discussions with Harry. We discussed this initially when I
56 asked him if there was anything I could possibly do to as part of the active 'placement' work I
57 could do with the CYC.

58 TAP members gave indication that a wall survey involving two placement students at CYC would
59 be beneficial for PhD. Doing a walls survey was at first about counting people and gaining
60 qualitative data, but as time drew on (my work on the HER report took longer, and my focus on
61 what data shifted took a different turn) I decided gaining qualitative data on the walls would be
62 a step to far for in terms of workload. On 16th November Harry and I had a discussion wherein it
63 was agreed that I (and placement students) would work on an accessibility audit instead of a
64 massive qualitative survey.

65 This seemed to suit us both, seeing as Harry has also recently been working on a court case
66 regarding the accessibility of the walls and potentially calling for a new conservation plan for the
67 walls (see news media).

68 So, he sent me some guidelines that were specifically for the Auditing of country paths (see file)
69 I developed a table having looked through the documents.

70 Met with two students to discuss the method and dates.

71 Met them in the morning of 11th Dec at the CYC. Couldn't find tape measurer, had to ask
72 another council worker to help. Found in cupboard. Sent another council worker email to say
73 had found it and borrowing along side hi-vis jackets (students waiting downstairs).

74 Couldn't get printer to print out sheets (slow connection). Had to go to department nearby, met
75 the council worker on the way, and reported that we had taken equipment.

76 Printed stuff out eventually. Discussed terms of surface, width, restricted, with students, decided
77 we wanted to tick if these met the standards. The clicker person would be positioned
78 somewhere obvious near Bootham Bar.

79 Then we went outside. It was bright and clear with some cloud (heavy). Cold.

80 We had flipped a coin to decide who was going to do the first clicker stint (KK)

81 Then myself and the other student (ZZ) took clipboard with map. Could see the map through
82 the blue transparent plastic so easily flip over. Looking for the 'chainage' brass studs that
83 marked every 25m. Couldn't find the first one at Bootham. Took us a fair while to work through
84 the first one as we were met with steps...and other restrictions (including the Bar itself). Visibility
85 in the bar an issue for vision impaired people. Basically we started getting the eyes for how
86 difficult and inaccessible the walls are. And this made me wonder again how useful the
87 information would be for Harry and CYC (have to ask him).

88 Questioned out loud: Were we taking too much detail? maybe (as I suggested) we needed to
89 develop own city wall version of auditing.

90 Then we really got going. Looking for chainage was difficult in the leafage and the rain. But my
91 view is that this expert viewing system came quite easily when we got the hang of it! (should ask
92 students what they thought of it).

93 Noticing trees, noticing the ways that the walls move and get smaller in width...the irony of
94 passing places that have steps (knowing that, if the walls were accessible, than this would be a
95 faux par). The use of the measuring tape very handy, but one student noticed that it meant
96 getting dirty hands (in the wet and leafage).

97 Also we couldn't hear each other if we got far away when measuring distances from markers to
98 passing places.

99 Rain made it difficult to write. People passing by, a few ask us what we are doing.

100 Rained again more heavily, we went back to the Bootham Bar and the nice café. Met other
101 student who had clicked away 74 people.

102 Story of prank call and ambulance, people watching. Nice bear latte! Warmth.

103 I did clicking next.

104 Stood out for 30mins. Cold. Needed a box to stand on. Noticing people not pushing door open
105 at top of Bootham.

106 But in the end we got 24 brass studs down and finished up at Monkbar Gate (ahead of
107 schedule).

108 **13-12-15 City walls audit**

109 Sunny start! Cold and bright then cloud cover. Met girls at Monkbar gate.

110 Went with KK and did until 2800 (got loads done). Walking over to Red Tower area she stated
111 (as ZZ had done two days before) that she had never walked around the area. Started
112 commenting on the how the signs weren't clear. Not a nice area to walk through. Mentions
113 Halfords and Staples and not looking nice. The city walls sign underneath the navigation road
114 sign didn't look too good—an afterthought job. Nice picture on it though.

115 Made me realise this was a good way to talk about place/space.

116 As we walk up to the Red Tower (I had already explained my role here the day before) she said it
117 was 'cute' like a little box.

118 Once we started that section of the walls noticed some issues with the breaks underneath the
119 trees (seem more pronounced and more often occurring in the stone slabs).

120 KK realises that she couldn't see the buildings from the other side of the walls, it's a nice area
121 she states smiling. She normally walks or drives past this area. That we head back towards the
122 Red Tower after we get to 12.

123 I was clicking the rest of the afternoon after our first break. There were lots of people watching,
124 and I saw several from the Red Tower area who I had met on Saturday. Stood and chatted a bit.
125 One jogger asked to take a selfie with me.

126 **14-12-15 CYC west offices**

127 Working with girls on report after the weekend. We had a meeting, I photocopied sheets and
128 then we inputted data. Easy to input data on shared Google sheets.

129 Then I devised a colour coding system which is then implemented (so we all have something to
130 do).

131 Then photos (more difficult and we hadn't taken photos systematically). Could not always
132 recognise the photos location. I proposed we all worked on different aspects, me and KK titling
133 the images according to their markers and then ZZ inputting them into the Google Sheet.

134 Then had a discussion on the sofas. Concluding our report is a tricky as we know the walls are
135 not accessible to disabled people, and there are different ranges of disability. The question of
136 how to make accessible had also been addressed in the 2004 plan—Harry will know why this
137 hasn't been implemented. ZZ suggests that SOME parts of the walls were more accessible, and
138 these might be easier to achieve alterations could be feasible. (Good ideas). I ask ZZ to write out
139 rough conclusion of our findings, and KK to write a short summary/reflection of our
140 methodology.

141 I write a bit about how we could work on the counting of the walls.

142 When we'd all finished writing up (by about 4:45pm) I emailed Harry to ask if he was free to talk
143 over what we had done. We eventually all met on the sofas to discuss, I brought my laptop.
144 Using the laptop with our Google sheet and Google doc, I explained the walls count first and the
145 results, including my idea for subsequent data gathering. Harry laughed at the idea of the
146 tokens, but acknowledged it would be difficult to count everyone. We talked also about
147 technological ways of counting (wifi?)

148 I asked KK to talk first. KK talked through her methodological reflections using laptop as
149 reference with Harry nodding and hmm-ing at interesting points. Discussion held about the best
150 way to do an audit and the restrictions on having to adapt. Harry mentions we were critiquing
151 the method as we went along (we all agreed). He mentions also the work at Berwick town walls
152 wherein the CYC environmental team are looking to work with English Heritage to define a walls
153 health and safety measure (they have fatalities as walls include a sheer drop of 30ft). He wonders
154 if maybe we could commission a report to Historic England and make a city walls audit
155 standard? I wonder out loud who could take this on?

156 I invite ZZ to discuss her comments on disability and the general findings, and she also makes
157 use of the laptop to point out her work. Harry again hmm-ing and nodding. The photos within
158 her work help her to make points about the visibility and the leafage (I interject and say that
159 these are things that she has identified can be amended). She continues that parts of the walls

160 could be made more accessible. She reports on the qualitative data and of people approaching
161 them to talk of their issue. Harry says these are interesting (never heard about the dog walking
162 specifically).

163 Asked us how much he could offer us (payment) to do the rest of the walls—laughing [but I am
164 not 100% he is joking? Need to check with him maybe] He did say “great piece of work” and
165 that be good for us to continue as we had our ‘eyes in’.

166 I interject as I want to pick up on the ‘eyes’ in aspect. I (somewhat clumsily) ask KK and ZZ
167 whether they felt they had their ‘eyes in’ at certain points during the auditing. KK says yes it
168 started to get easier to do the measuring and just went along with it. ZZ didn’t like the
169 measuring as much and wished to have more of the qualitative approach.

170 Wrapping up of conversation includes talk of continuing placement (which I instigate)

171 Talk of ZZ leaving for Canada and change of flights.

172 21-12-15 Chat with Harry and Sean about HER

173 Harry: where to start? Discovered in forest that is CYC that someone is producing web based
174 application. Similar thing. Kat, you told Sean?

175 Sean: think good idea, wider, happening everywhere, thank god people are getting on it.

176 Harry: met with Jo and colleagues. HER and synergies between they want to achieve. We are
177 going to group back together on Jan 21st. Refers to me: emailing holly at ADS. To Sean: Bottom
178 line is don’t stop virtual Hungate and conversation with Victoria and archives, also YAT contact.
179 Put together a lot of the information. Might save you a lot of work. Be good to have
180 conversation with the YAT contact. Integrated with archives. Maybe don’t want to do all her
181 work. Have to do it yourself but some help will be good. What do you envisage with this
182 Hungate project?

183 Sean: Overhead map 3d houses. Map where people have moved. Will be able to trace where
184 people have moved. If can link that to York work houses. If Victoria has workhouse records.
185 Understand a lot to do but it fills my day. Idea been talking to Vicky for while mansion house
186 way to map Hungate but to where follow family. If York different organisation different quality
187 an levels of information about York’s history. Got to go to each one of these separately.
188 Wouldn’t it be nice to go to one spot a search all of these. Been talking to Dringhouses. There’s
189 a need to get in contact with other groups.

190 Harry: Nice if you went to individual or archive or York explore or York museums trust then
191 integrate everything else and vice versa and that I’d really like to do. Plumbing.

192 Sean: really good idea. It would tell you where it is.

193 Harry: central point and search facility.

194 Sean: would be much easier.

195 Harry. Duplication not worried about. How I want to move forward. Money

196 Sean: ha-ha

197 Harry. Could be part of development of application historic environment record. Funding,
198 enhancement and Interoperability. Needs to be developed with this in mind. Project proposal
199 that we need to submit to the HLF all of these organisation and York minster and borthwick.
200 Bring all of these in. Much better chance of getting funding.

201 Sean: once built easier to add parts to it. York explore digitization.

202 Both: Issues with data.

203 Harry: For example, photogrammetry. How sustainable are these surface mapping images? Need
204 a proper piece of software. 3d models within software which often then die. Model dies. How
205 you can caste a 3d mapped model and then ensure it's sustainable? Don't know enough about
206 it. Can still read jpeg from 25 years ago.

207 Sean: working with computers always been standard formats the more compact the easier it get.
208 Mkv. now it's a standard thing. File size if bmp is huge. All these things are going to change. A
209 lot of software manufactures so many can program that do so many. Sustainable models and
210 outputs it's a problem. should attempt to get round this. Video has been round for last 15years.
211 Specific software programs want own file expansion. Save books in pdfs. Digital formats. Best
212 bet.

213 Harry: I feel lucky to be having these conversations. If you don't know the right person to talk to.

214 Sean: Suggestion. QR library?

215 Harry: V interesting. Flirted with QR codes in different contexts. Very low use. Apart from estate
216 agents. Need to have reader.

217 Sean. Everywhere has QR codes

218 Harry: QR on city walls and York 800 plaques.

219 Sean: QR for them which save so much wall space. Better idea. That's thing with digitizing can
220 predict which is going to be popular.

221 21-12-15 Being in the CYC world

222 [I am cautious to write the following as I am not certain how this lies with the informed consent
223 and ethical issues of ethnographic writing. I am going to attempt to describe ethnographically
224 my own experience of being in the CYC West Offices, and observations I make on the day-to-
225 day. I will not describe the people around me because I do not have their informed consent to
226 do so. The reason of lack of consent lies in the agreed level of organisation made between
227 myself and Harry, who is also my supervisor and collaborative participant in research. We agreed
228 back in July that I would attempt to follow 6 CYC officers, gain access to day-to-day activities
229 and commence interviewing. The former has not taken place to the same extent as the Red
230 Tower (other locality). The latter has had some success, but the position of the researcher has
231 been difficult to define in the applied research terrain. In the end, I find I have been involved in
232 my interviews, yet not gained day-to-day involvement.

233

234 The reason why I have not gained day-to-day involvement is due to my considering that the
235 selected practitioners are working at their desks and overseeing their actions in real time is
236 disruptive. If they are not at their desk those selected are involved in meetings (wherein I find it
237 difficult to gain informed consent within contexts). There is also the issue of confidentiality and
238 potentially dissent.

239 All the same, I have been coming to the CYC offices on Mondays and Tuesdays since July 2015
240 (so for 5 months, excluding September). The first month (of ten days) was dedicated to
241 established the technical structures of 'being in place' --using the computers and gaining
242 access). It also gave Harry opportunity to introduce me to different people. The second month
243 of ten days involved interviewing (at CYC and RT). The third month (Oct) involved working on
244 placement work. The fourth the same, and the fifth involved both placement work and some
245 continuation of the interviewing (after reviewing my research approach in light of the Red Tower
246 Consultation work I took on in mid November). The 50 or so days I spent here are detailed in the
247 fieldnotes and multi-local reflections elsewhere, but there is not much of the being in the world.
248 Until now!]

249 I get to the CYC on my bike, the tall West Office Buildings looming large on my left as I follow
250 the back entrance road past the security bar, down the back lane and past the smokers shelter,
251 to the vast bike shed. There are three double bike stations which must hold over 200 bikes.
252 These are always pretty full when I turn up (9:45), and today is just the same. I use my CYC
253 badge (with entrust card within) to open the black gate. Park bike, leave it and head toward the
254 pedestrian entrance. I am met with glass windows that sit within archways. I see a reflection of
255 myself walking past. Inside are tables and chairs and I believe nimrods boards. The white takes

256 on a green glass hue. I don't notice too much because I am trying to be quick, I want to get to
257 the desks. I exit the bike shed through the pedestrian gate, turn right, following the brick wall of
258 the building towards the road. The city walls are on my left, and today the sun is shining on
259 them. I get to the staff entrance, place my badge on the white plastic square which then turns
260 blue and a high pitched noise emits (from somewhere). I pull open the door, somebody else
261 comes out. Somebody else is following me through. My badge is still in my hand as I need to
262 slide it over the dark horizontal glass that lies on top of one of the three/4? metal+ glass
263 barriers. As I do so, the red arrow in the dark glass turns green and the glass door (with the
264 signs on it) swings open. I turn left up the stairs, noticing the clock parallel to it (9:51). Walking
265 up the stairs, people are coming up, down through doors.

266 I get to the third floor puffing heavily, I keep my badge in my hand as I place in on another
267 white plastic box on the wall, which turns blue. Silently, I push the door. I turn left again and
268 make my way to the ladies toilets. People are coming in and out of the communal passage way.

269 After taking off my coat and bag, and placing the badge lanyard over my head, I vacate the
270 toilets and head to the hotdesk section of the DCSD. I whizz by rows looking for the usual desk
271 that I sit at. I notice the white, curved, corrugated ceiling with grey-painted metal pillars (they
272 have bolts) and hanging long-lights. The light at the top of the third floor is bright, there is a
273 large, semi circle set of windows at the east end of the offices and you can see the George
274 Hudson building but also the sky. There are also sky windows in the corrugated ceiling. The
275 three floors are separated in the middle by a open space. If you care to look down the open
276 space you can see the the other two floors and ground floor. There is also the rainbow string--
277 an artist's installation, that looks like a net.

278 The sides of the edge of the open space is glass, so you can simply turns ones head to see down
279 to the next floor. Lots of rows of desks and lots of people. The rows of desks sit 5 people on
280 both sides facing each other (but can't see the other person as a large desktop screen covers
281 your immediate view, in a big black rectangle). I sit and pull out my bag, my laptop and my
282 charger. I place my laptop on top of my filofax diary in order to prop in up. I am self-conscious of
283 my actions. People in the local planning and DCSD area around me are using desktops which
284 are turned on. As I sit on the orthopaedic chairs (with comfy arms and swinging seat) I look at
285 the screens and see various visions (emails , plans, maps, charts). Some people are talking to
286 each other, but most are absorbed in the work they are doing. There is a sense of energy and
287 concentration.

288 I commit myself to work. I log in to the CYC portal using my entrust card (i.e. I bring up the web
289 page on my laptop, I type in the username and password). I see my emails, I plan my actions and
290 try to get on with it.

291 At 11ish, someone asks to make some tea. Sneezing occurs in the other side of the room and
292 often does involve other sneezing. I remember how at one time someone made a comment
293 about this. I can hear voices, discussing clearly, some low, other far off more expansive, papers
294 shuffling, staplers, I can hear people making tea in the pop up kitchen at the east end.

295

296 I commit myself to work again.

297 I have been noticing Christmas decorations on the desks are different. Origami.

298 I walk down to the cafe at lunch with Harry to meet someone from YPP. I come back and check
299 and write emails. I interview Harry.

300 This continues, I lose myself in the questions of the days and the promise of gleaning something
301 solid and worthwhile (which I won't shoot myself for later). I try to focus with the same energy of
302 those around me.

303 I have a break at 3:30 and then return, walking up the stairs back to the desk area, feeling
304 amazed that some people seem to sit at the desks for longer.

305 As the day draws to an end, that there are less people becomes apparent. I say goodbye to
306 another participant within the DCSD area and chat to her for a bit about the HER. Those on the
307 other side of the glass barrier to my left have gone completely. Cleaning sounds are caught
308 within hearing from 6 pm. People begin to chat as they are leaving. An unseen yawner becomes
309 audible.

310 I finish writing and ignore the low talks (that are probably very interesting) behind me. I cursorily
311 notice and then ignore the late-typers in front of their desktops. I see the piles of maps, papers
312 banded by elastic on the desk next to me, within my periphery, and ignore these too, despite
313 the temptation to seek further. I pack my things, reclaim my coat, press the big green button on
314 the left wall of the two main exit doors, push open, follow the stairs down, and do the opposite
315 of what I did in the morning. I leave on my bike with my lights on because it is now dark.

316

B.iii Excel Coding Graphs for West Office Data

Table 5. Coding themes (word coverage) for all CYC domains (for figs 20-25 in Chapter Five)

	A : Communities & Equalities	B : General Planning	C : Heritage & Archaeological Management	D : Neighbourhood Planning	E : The Local Plan	F : Transport & Infrastructure
1 : Policy-Legal act or other paperwork	504	855	3256	1845	1750	1107
2 : Challenges	2916	472	5251	2138	1613	1190
3 : Concern	550	296	1922	242	422	1200
4 : Lack of people power or structure	237	11	1035	19	28	0
5 : Sense of being shifted in a certain direction	297	143	482	0	146	111
6 : Space issues	471	92	632	69	0	139
7 : Time issues	372	57	1528	216	387	372
8 : Being in Place	2360	566	2715	178	139	577
9 : Boundaries or routes	1618	867	7238	1316	914	2499
10 : Differences in or across place	1939	378	753	775	387	544
11 : Distant	575	0	548	204	71	386
12 : Drawing attention to heritage	725	1125	10223	299	634	1026
13 : Hubs & Discussion Spaces	2857	54	543	0	5	234
14 : Multi-Locality	1331	173	3222	660	829	1164
15 : Planning or place change	574	753	4404	1498	1147	1278
16 : Sense of place	281	450	775	44	7	634
17 : Finances	1175	0	2247	471	141	382
18 : Physical Infrastructure & Amenities	1282	192	891	281	171	1350
19 : Provisions (services or goods)	1205	0	41	41	0	41
20 : Changes to organisation	232	35	707	131	643	1392
21 : Past Actions	744	161	1518	31	217	532
22 : People Power & Structure	855	109	1969	159	273	81
23 : Process	27	860	4370	588	394	0
24 : Roles	2236	563	3081	745	522	258
25 : THE PARTICIPATION SPECTRUM	0	0	0	0	0	0
26 : 1. Knowledge gather, reasoning & exchange	1840	1076	13490	3575	2718	3657
27 : Decision making knowledge	355	2485	4512	564	742	146
28 : Evidence type	110	291	1949	714	526	347
29 : 2. Value Gather & Exchange	614	294	962	485	108	459
30 : Economic valuation	254	0	11	0	39	39
31 : Promoting place value	115	0	0	45	0	0
32 : Qualitative Methods	33	0	0	47	67	151
33 : Using visuals as value gathering or exchange technique	33	0	8	41	0	0
34 : 3. Engagement & Recruitment Methods	4146	825	2845	1033	1265	1185
35 : Email communication	50	0	140	126	0	0
36 : Events	239	84	142	0	0	0
37 : Lack of engagement	380	127	49	198	7	0
38 : Meetings or workshops	548	190	1392	202	228	158
39 : Opposing views	681	192	766	967	572	1032
40 : Unexpected engagement	144	0	252	125	0	0

41 : 4. Local decision making or responsibility (devolution)	2209	0	751	1046	211	58
42 : Towards better or best practice	1755	534	3787	998	1161	1382
43 : 1. Media in Place (NI)	0	149	5422	106	73	134
44 : Location	0	73	603	0	73	73
45 : 2. Media of Place (I)	367	117	2179	205	26	262
46 : Location	0	0	72	0	0	15
47 : Velocity	0	0	0	0	0	83
48 : Venture Across Extraordinary	0	115	115	0	0	0
49 : 3. Media of Place (NI)	54	174	1522	165	190	105
50 : 4. Media in Place (I)	0	0	0	0	0	0
51 : Functional Media	0	5	139	0	0	0
52 : Media limitations	248	62	5582	210	6	374
53 : Media Overlap	250	114	3170	326	439	131
54 : Urphenomen	0	0	93	0	0	0
55 : VALUES	1452	461	4004	593	31	1251
56 : VISION	1074	326	3075	443	382	474
57 : Changing vision	0	81	379	81	175	111
58 : Early idea	0	0	52	0	0	250
59 : Later idea	0	81	130	81	0	49
60 : Vision for multi-locality	152	84	303	0	204	121

Appendix C

C.i Tithe Barn Restoration Timeline (Full)

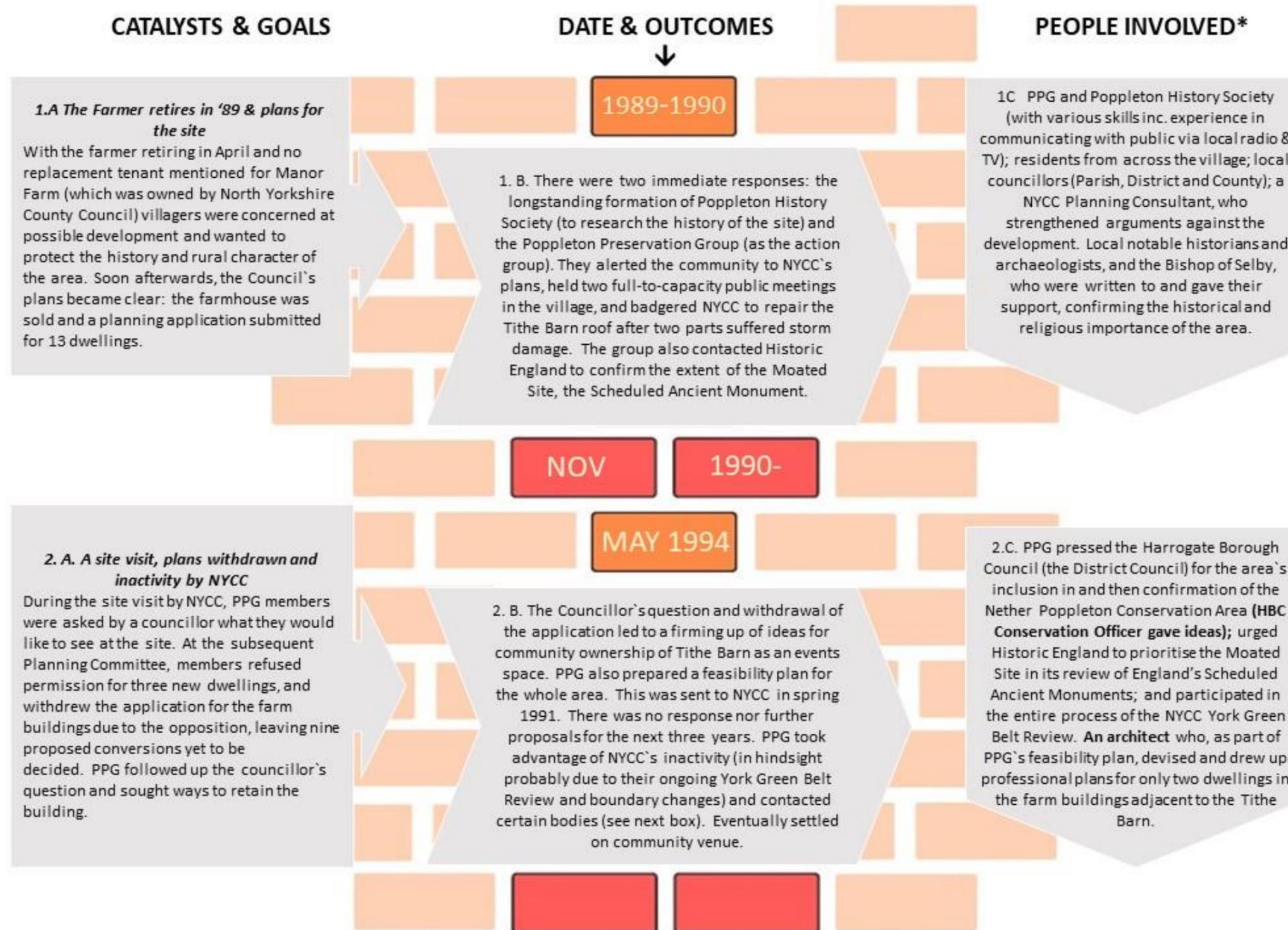


Figure 4. Tithe Barn Timeline-1

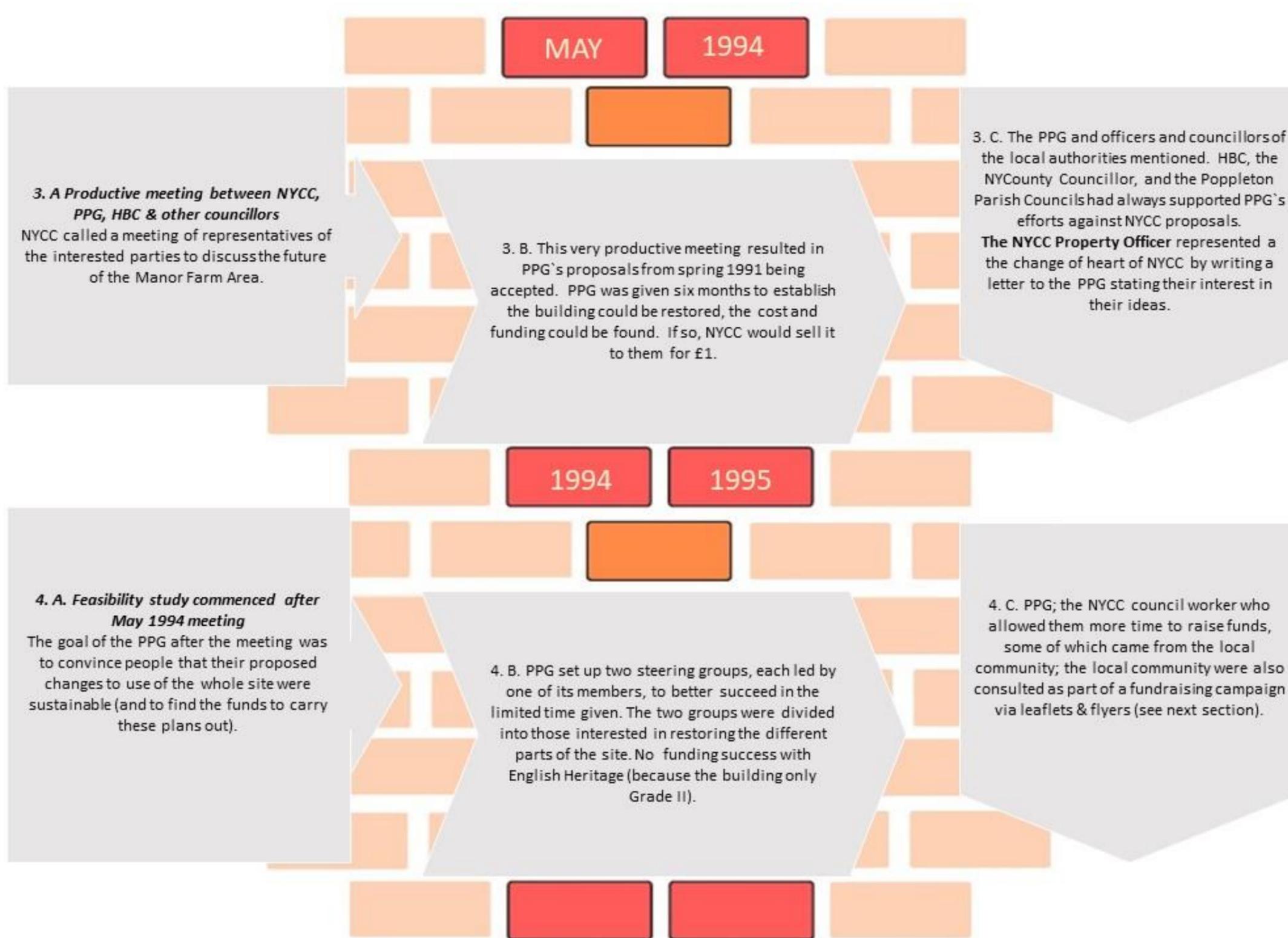


Figure 5. Tithe Barn Timeline-2

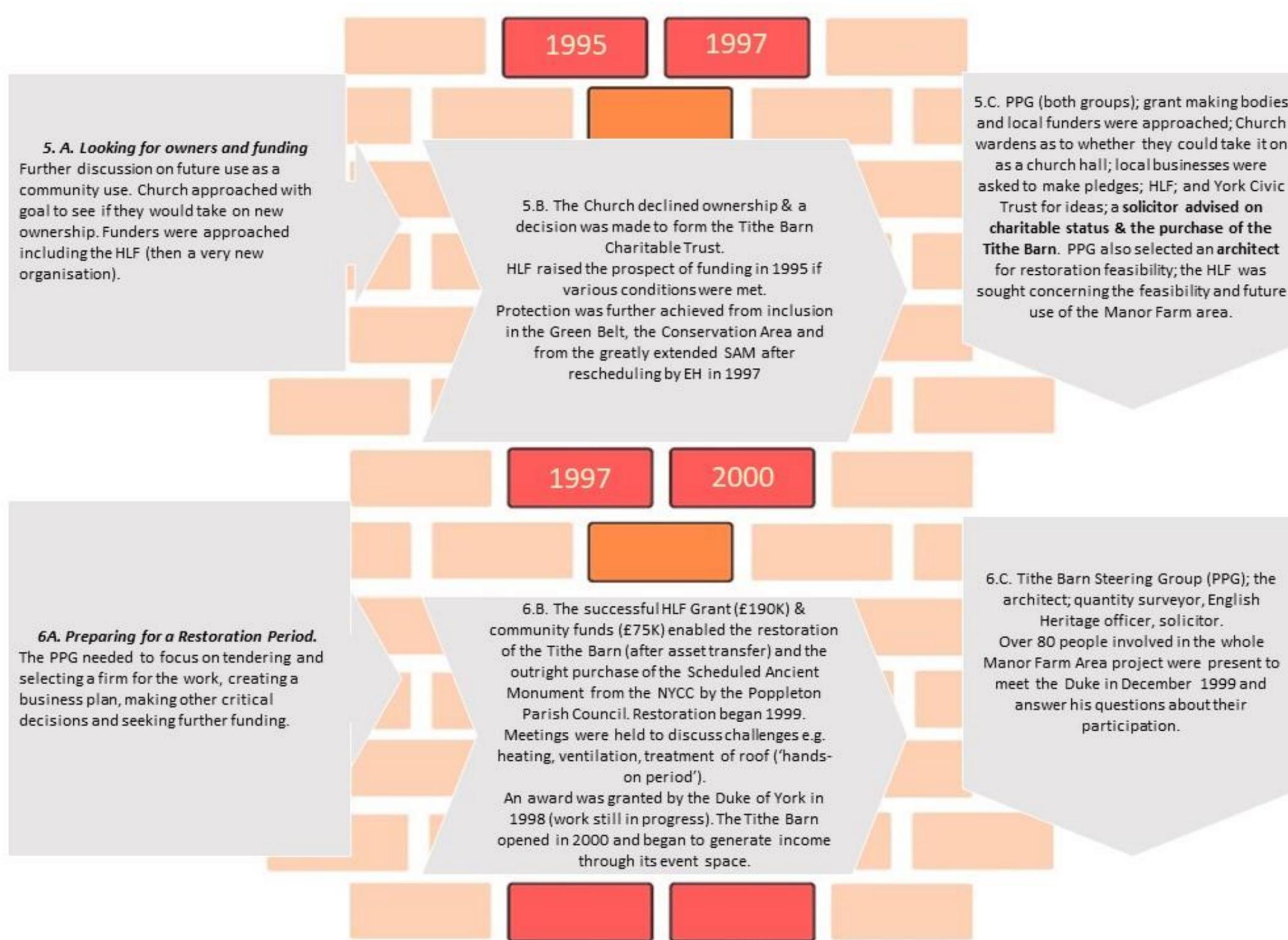


Figure 6. Tithe Barn Timeline-3

C.ii Example of Feedback Comments from Trustee

Tithe Barn

1a) Retirement of the farmer so all the land and buildings around the farmhouse no longer needed in this area. 1989

Probably the proposed LA Boundary changes led to a Planning application by North Yorkshire County Council: no suggestion to re-let the farm, possibly because of transfer of this part of North Yorkshire into the proposed new unitary authority of York seven years later (1996). An opportunity for NYCC to realise this asset before then. LAs had acquired farms earlier in the 20th C but a trend starting to dispose of these as the opportunity arose, by selling for development.

b) The Planning Applications which threatened this area – the Manor Farm Area. 1989 - 1991

c) The question asked by a councillor on the site visit, summer 1991: "What would you like to see?" This was followed by a period of inactivity from the autumn 1991 onwards by NYCC to progress the planning proposals:

the proposals were withdrawn in the face of opposition and NYCC was preoccupied with the NY Structure Plan which was dealing with the York Green Belt Review (there is a correct title for this) which reached the Inspector stage in 1995 but was never finalized/adopted because of the Boundary change at that point.

d) Time running out for NYCC before the boundary changes and their willingness to consider our ideas. 1994

e) Doing feasibility studies to see if the Tithe Barn could be repaired/restored and if the money for doing so could be found.

f) Can link f) with e) if you wish. The establishment of the Heritage Lottery Fund (? 1995 or 96)

Katrina, I should have said the TB won the Duke of York's Community Initiative Award in Spring 1999 hence his visit in December 1999. The Award was then in its second or third year. That says everything about community involvement!

From the above you can see external factors and events outside our control both precipitated the crisis and then helped our efforts.

2. The immediate outputs of these key moments.

a) Many residents were concerned early on when it was known the farmer was to retire especially as the farmhouse was soon sold off so it was clear a working farm was not envisaged in future, the fields being distributed to another County Council farm in Poppleton. Starting a Poppleton History Society had been talked about for years but this threat prompted action, founded February 1989. It was seen by some of us as another group to defend the historical importance of the Manor Farm Area, the original Anglo Saxon village of Nether Poppleton, comprising a Scheduled Ancient Monument covering most of the site, an ancient church dedicated to a Saxon Saint credited with founding a nunnery on the site in late 8th Century (need to check if 7th C), and a Grade 2 listed building with its own interesting history relating to major national events.

b) A planning application soon after for residential on part of the area alerted the community to what would happen and the Poppleton Preservation Group was quickly formed, as a protest group. As each planning application for different parts of the site and buildings came forward, PPG was ready, holding village meetings, keeping people informed, lobbying councillors, attending the site and planning meetings, getting the support of relevant and interested well known people, especially those able to back up the historic importance of the site. We researched tithe barns in North Yorkshire, establishing the rarity of any still existing, few having been built compared with the south anyway.

c) From autumn 1991 when the planning was withdrawn, for six months Poppleton Preservation Group focused on preparing what they considered a feasible plan for the whole area. This was sent to NYCC in spring 1992. PPG took the opportunity of the quiet period

1992 -1994 to ensuring the Manor Farm Area was included in the York Green Belt (taking an active part in the NYCC Review) and lobbying Harrogate District Council which we then came under to expedite the Conservation Area proposed for Nether Poppleton and to include the MFA in this. Basically we were doing everything possible to protect the area from the threat of future development. Both GB and CA efforts succeeded.

d) Summer 1994 NYCC proposed a meeting with PPG, Harrogate District Council, District Councilors, to discuss the future of the Manor Farm Area. A very productive meeting at which all the proposals in our proposals for the area were accepted, and time given by NYCC to see if feasible. A willingness and positive approach to resolve the future of this area. Some areas involved PPG getting the commitment of the parish council to take them on, and we were given six months to explore the feasibility of funding and restoration of the Tithe Barn. (This willingness was evidenced from then on as the six months became five years before the Tithe Barn was handed over for £1 to the charity set up to run it.)

e) At this critical point, under the umbrella still of PPG, PPG set up two steering groups, each led by one of its members, better to succeed in the limited time given. I led the Tithe Barn group. Each group recruited additional members, thus widening the community involvement.

f) The HLF ensured the success of our proposals. English Heritage was unable to grant for Grade 2 listed buildings. It enabled the restoration of the Tithe Barn, and also the purchase of the Ancient Scheduled Monument by the parish council.

General point: the Manor Farm Area had largely been taken for granted whilst a working farm. This change in 1989 was key in raising an awareness throughout the two Poppleton of the history of the area.

3. The end goals for the Tithe Barn at each key moment

a) To stop the area being spoilt by residential over development (13 properties proposed.

Throughout the goal was not to let this area be spoilt but to retain this small remaining intact historical corner of the original village, which was also a reminder of our social history as a rural farming village. People also increasingly recognized its environmental value – an area to enjoy.

b) The specific goals were to retain the various farm buildings and the spaces so key to achieving this.

c) The goal now was how to achieve the retention of the buildings and spaces, the practical problems – for example, could they be repaired and then maintained, who would take them on, finding new uses especially for the buildings.

d), e), f) A focus on the Tithe Barn: we were determined to restore it so the goal was to convince people the proposed new use was sustainable and then find the money to restore it.

4. Those actively involved at key moments were involved throughout. There were two phases: i) protest, then ii) reconstruction.

Poppleton Preservation Group: approximately ten members, all interested in retaining the area and the Tithe Barn. (A local farmer, the people who had bought the farmhouse, a local historian, people in the vicinity of the Manor Farm Area, a couple from the other ends of the village etc.). After a), b), c), members of the two separate sub groups of PPG were involved. The community in general: residents from both villages, including both long standing and more recent residents (only 20/30/40years resident!). There was great support for saving this area from development although we were aware some people were indifferent. Their view was respected. Obviously our local councilors (Parish, District and County).

At d) we involved the local church.

At e) the community was heavily involved in funding efforts – organizing and supporting events, personal funding pledges.

The number of people actively involved was evident when the Duke of York visited in 1999 and over 80 were present in small relevant groups for him to meet and quiz about their participation in various ways. The entire school came down to welcome him along with villagers.

General point: it was important to keep the community informed and on board. We took a realistic approach to both possibilities of realizing funding, and finding a sustainable use for the Tithe Barn (and other buildings)

5. Others sought through further engagement and how.

a) and

b) A critical stage: historians to substantiate the importance of the area, the Bishop of Selby. We wrote to them and they supported, giving reasons for their support.

c) The Conservation officer, Harrogate Borough Council, re Conservation Area. Very supportive and helpful in suggesting possible uses. I think it was at this stage we looked at possible future ownership of the Tithe Barn (along with uses): local church as a church hall, Landmark Trust, The Vivian... Trust (need to find its proper name, similar to the Landmark).

d) Moving on to

e) Needed to find an architect for restoration feasibility (contacted three, before deciding, choice had to be based on what they could offer and having no money to pay for

f) Funding stage: for several months in contact with English Heritage officer; then HLF; York Civic Trust, for ideas (productive); approached grant making bodies and asked local businesses to pledge in the hope successful with the HLF.

6. Key places Tithe Barn connected to.

Primarily it is part of a special area: the Manor Farm Area. It cannot be divorced from its context.

It is connected to its own Tudor Sensory garden created behind the Tithe Barn in 2003.

It is connected to each of the buildings in this area, all adjacent: St. Emerald's Church, Manor Farm, the Cart Shed, the two converted farm buildings to residential (The Stables and The Granary).

It relates to the adjacent spaces, all significant as are the buildings to its history: the Moat Field (SAM), the pond and wildlife area opposite. Since 2000 with the acquisition of the Millennium Green, it also relates to that.

Very much a feature of Church Lane, which developed as the Saxon village expanded.

To Nether Poppleton as a whole as very much part of its history, ancient and more recent.

Also to Upper Poppleton now the two villages are linked through building (and the church) and seen as one by many. Poppleton as a whole feels it has ownership of the Tithe Barn and the Trustees come from both Upper and Nether.

7. Who uses the building and who meant to.

Initially various possibilities of ownership and therefore use were explored, the main aim being to retain the building somehow. Between 1992 and 1994, it was evident village use was a possible outcome and possible uses were listed which would enable the building to be sustainable. Because of its setting and context, low level use was envisaged rather than an everyday active village hall equivalent, making use of the surrounding area for craft and educational studies, church use (weddings, funerals, christenings, events – have annual Garden Fete), art exhibitions, meetings, study days etc. This is what it is used for. Celebrations (older birthday parties, wedding anniversaries) are popular. Fund-raising events for the T.B. and other organisations. From the start discos were not considered – proximity of residential – and children's parties have also proved difficult as noisy, for the same reason. Major events are limited to so many p.a. as are events with music. After sixteen years (we opened in 2000) we have managed an appropriate and sustainable activity. We have a wonderful Poppleton artists Art Exhibition every August, and a Christmas Fair early December for the T.B.

8. Going by the lack of criticism and the number of compliments, we are confident that the Tithe Barn is viewed as a great asset to both Poppleton. The Trustees work together with the other halls in the village so that we all flourish. We tend to complement each other in our uses. The TB offers a different ambience, and context.

9. Has the Tithe Barn changed its surrounding area?

The simple answer is no and it is not expected to in the future, being protected as conservation area and green belt. The restoration of the Tithe Barn and neighboring buildings, the local ownership and involvement of various parts of the surrounding area has improved but not changed the surroundings visually. The only inevitable physical changes have been the introduction of a very small residential element, and very small extension for facilities to the Tithe Barn itself. However, the biggest change brought through the retention of the Manor Farm Area/Tithe Barn has been the opening up of the area to public access, (one of the underlying goals, along with public ownership so future control by the village of what happened in the area, of our feasibility study under c), which I should have probably mentioned above). The Millennium Green, a 4+acre field across from the Tithe Barn was created in 2000, has increased this.

General point; our aim was to enhance the area whilst not spoiling nor changing it, to retain this special building and the surroundings and make them work and be actively enjoyed.

C.iii Current Relationship with Locality (Tithe Barn)

What is the building's connection to the surrounding area?

Primarily it is part of a special area: the Manor Farm Area. It cannot be divorced from its context. It is connected to its own Tudor Sensory garden created behind the Tithe Barn in 2003. It is connected to each of the buildings in this area, all adjacent: St. Everilda's Church, Manor Farmhouse, the Cart Shed, the two converted farm buildings to residential (The Stables and The Granary). It relates to the adjacent spaces, all significant along with the buildings to its history: the Moat Field (SAM), the pond and wildlife area opposite. Since 2000 with the acquisition of the Millennium Green, it also relates to that. The Tithe Barn is very much a feature of Church Lane, which developed as the Saxon village expanded from around the church. It connects to Nether Poppleton as very much part of its history, ancient and more recent, and also to Upper Poppleton now the two villages are linked through building (and the church) and seen as one by many. Poppleton as a whole feels it has ownership of the Tithe Barn and the Trustees come from both Upper and Nether."

Who uses the building?

Initially various possibilities of ownership and therefore use were explored, the main aim being to retain the building somehow. Between 1994 and 1996, it became evident that village use was a feasible outcome and uses were listed which would enable the building to be sustainable. Because of its setting and context, low level use was envisaged rather than an everyday active village hall equivalent, making use of the surrounding area for craft and educational studies, church use—weddings (some of which are local), funerals, christenings, events, and annual Garden Fete—art exhibitions, meetings, study days etc. This is what it is now used for. Celebrations (older birthday parties, wedding anniversaries) are popular, as are fund-raising events for the T.B. and other organisations. From the start discos were not considered – proximity of residential – and children's parties have also proved difficult as noisy, for the same reason so are not permitted. Major events are limited to so many p.a. as are events with music. After sixteen years (we opened in 2000) we have achieved and

managed an appropriate and sustainable activity. We have a wonderful Poppleton Artists Art Exhibition every August, and a Christmas Fair early December.

Do you have an idea of the local opinion?

"Going by the lack of criticism and the number of compliments, we are confident that the Tithe Barn is viewed as a great asset to both Poppletons. The Trustees work together with the other halls in the village so that we all flourish. We tend to complement each other in our uses. The TB offers a different ambience, and context."

Has the Tithe Barn changed its surrounding area?

"The simple answer is no and it is not expected to in the future, being protected as part of the conservation area and green belt. The restoration of the Tithe Barn and neighbouring buildings, the local ownership, and therefore control, and local involvement in various parts of the surrounding area has improved but not changed the surroundings visually. The only inevitable physical changes have been the introduction of a very small residential element, and very small extension for facilities to the Tithe Barn itself. However, the biggest change brought through the retention of the Manor Farm Area/Tithe Barn has been the opening up of the area to public access, one of the underlying goals. The Millennium Green, a 4+acre field across from the Tithe Barn, created in 2000, has increased this. With the Millennium Green nationwide programme, the opportunity arose to create a buffer on that side of the church which then completed the area, what we like to call an oasis. General point: our aim was to enhance the area whilst not spoiling nor changing it, to retain this special building and the surroundings and make them work and be actively enjoyed."

C.iv Tithe Barn Website Analysis

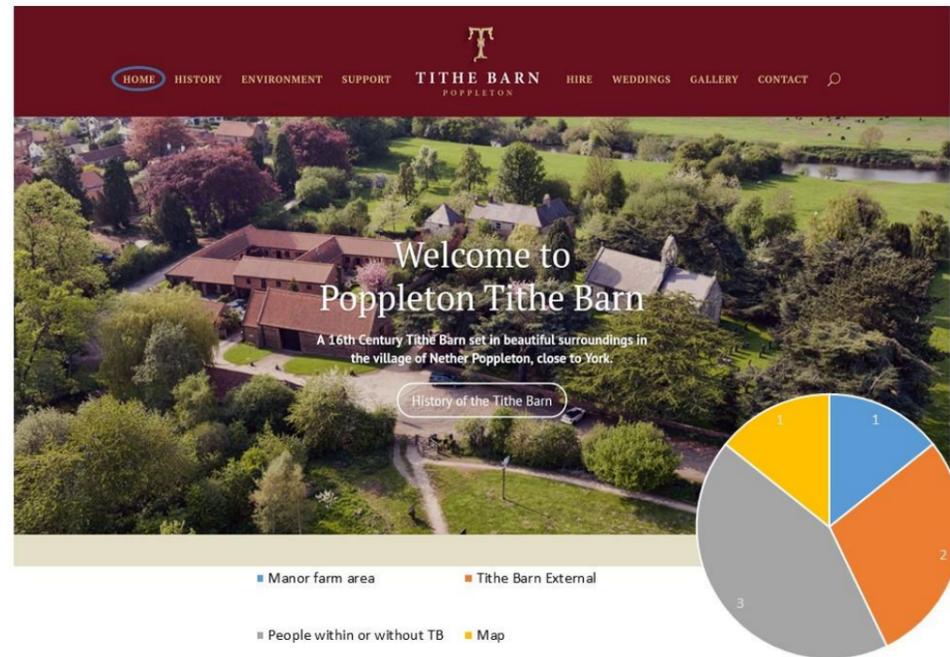


Figure 9. Homepage (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).



Figure 7. History of Tithe Barn (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).

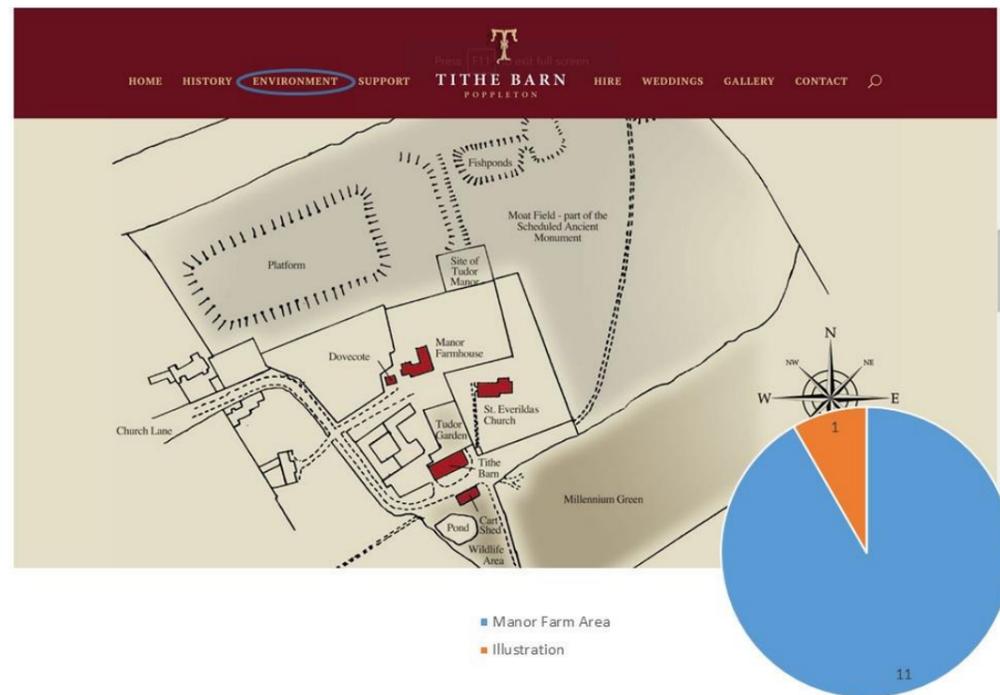


Figure 10. Environment (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016)

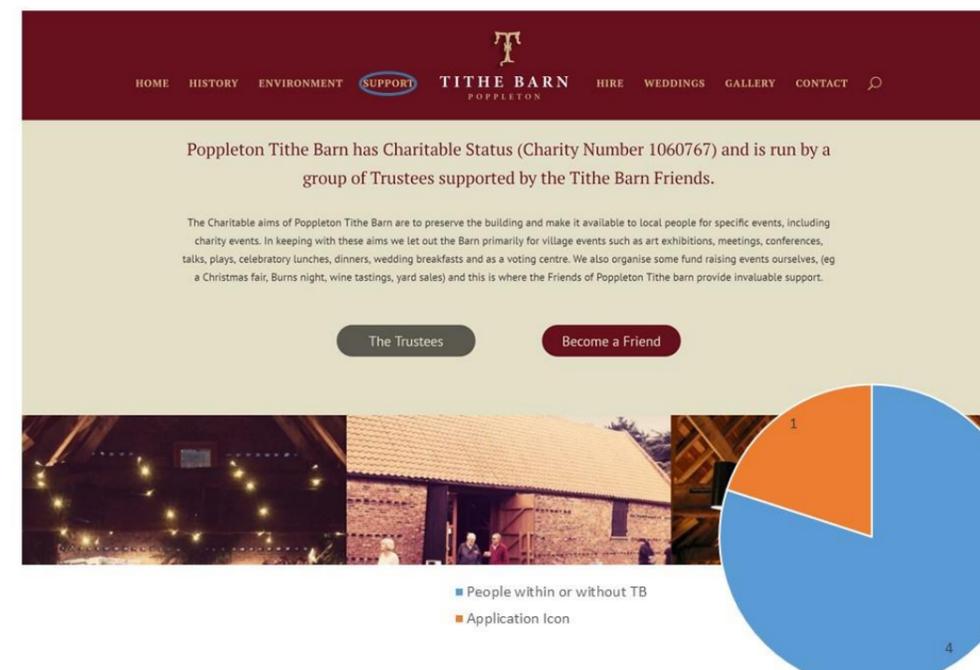


Figure 8. Support (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).



Figure 11. Hire (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).



Figure 12. Weddings (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).

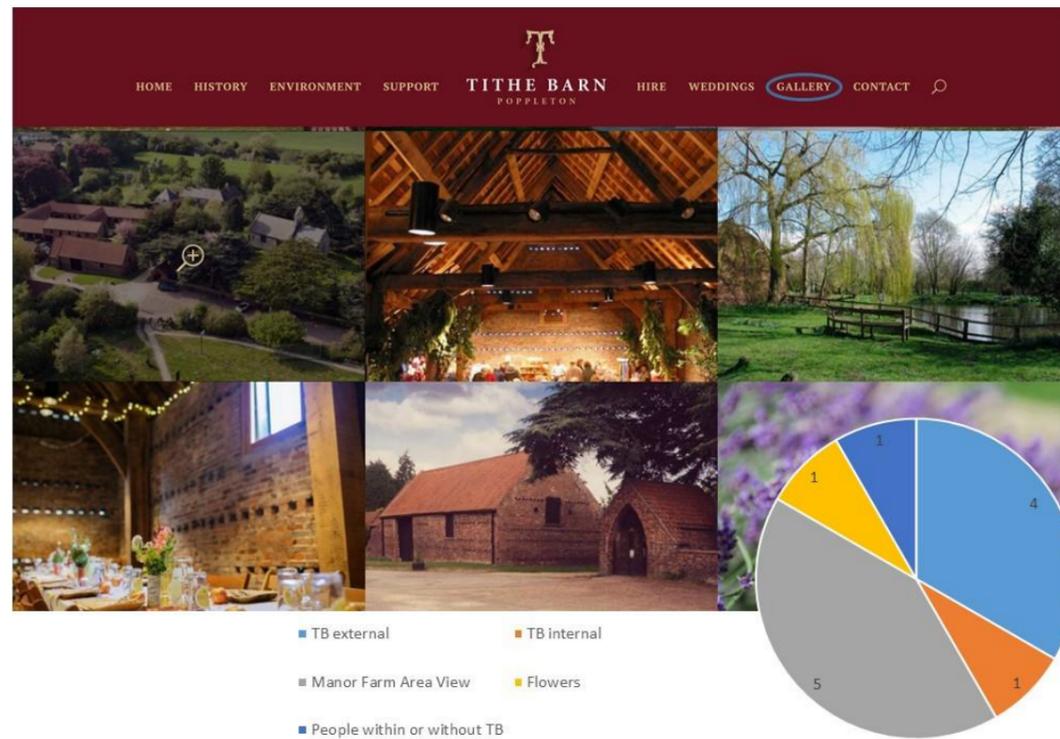
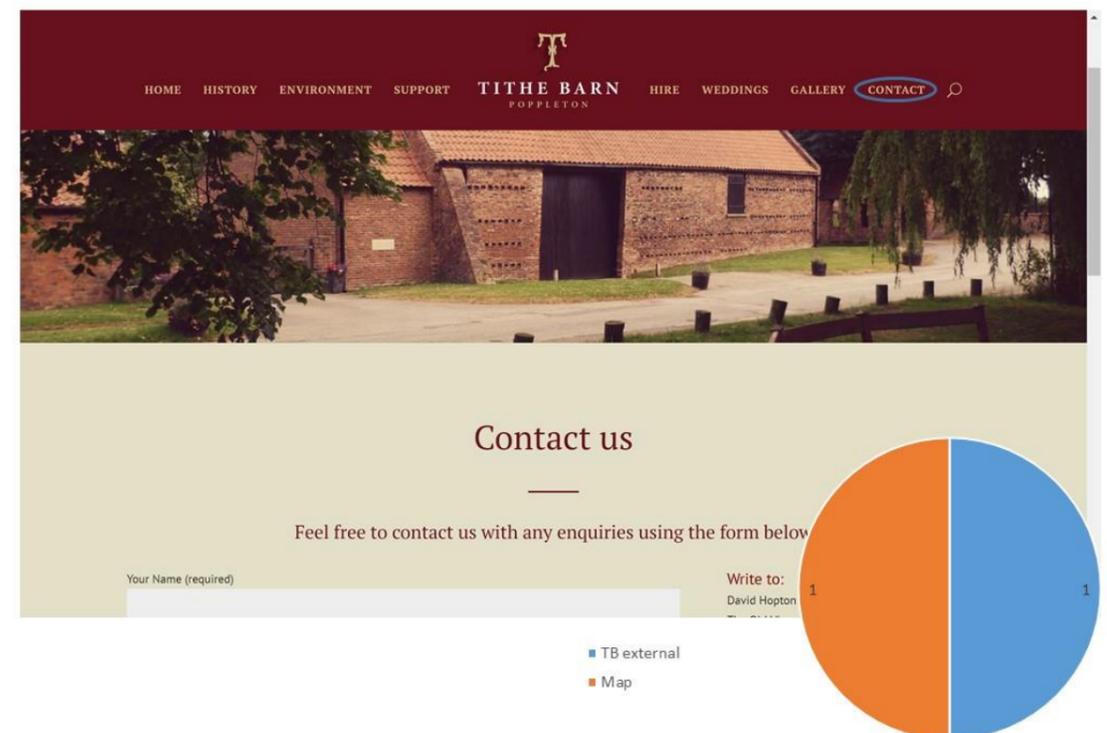
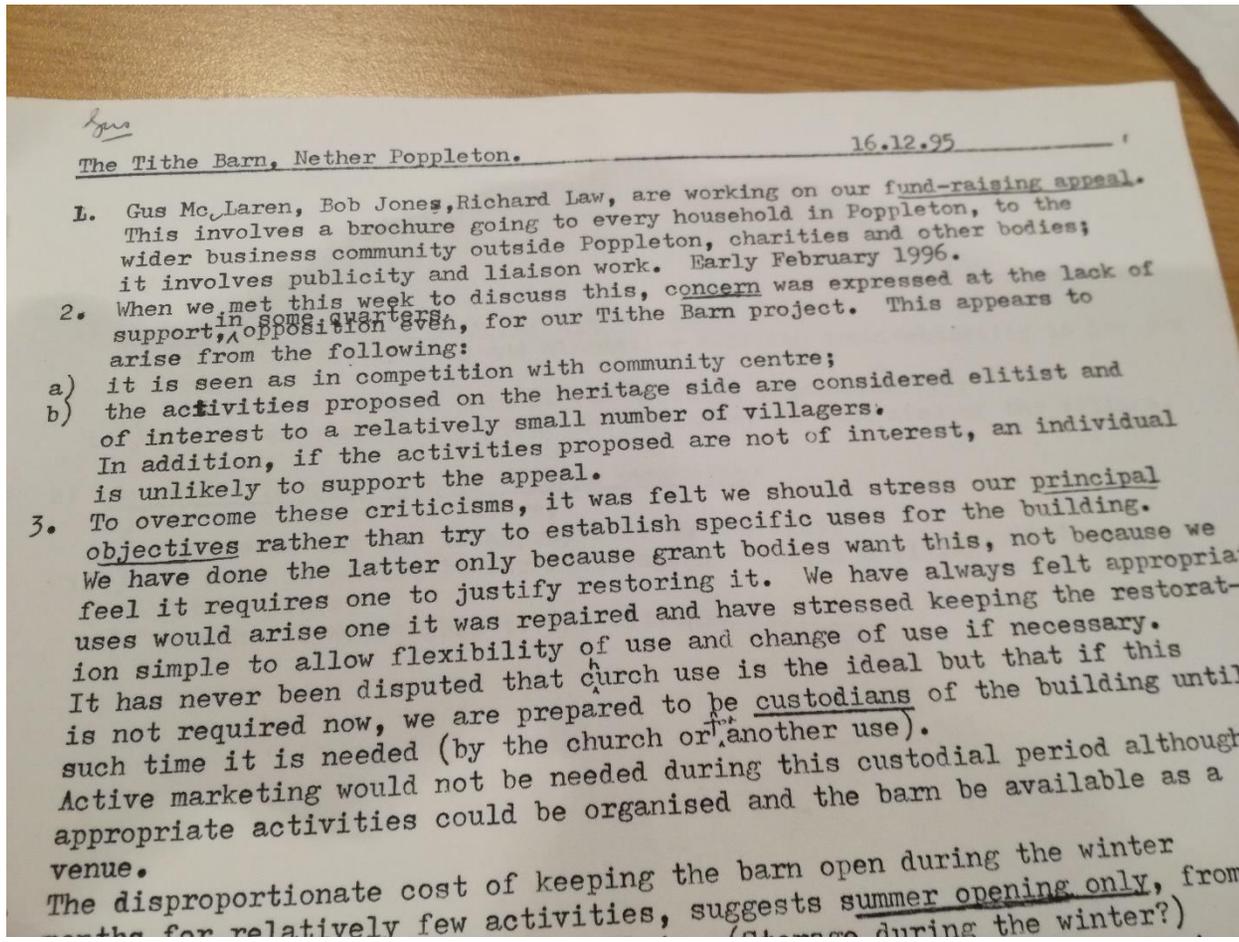


Figure 13. Gallery (Friends of Poppleton Tithe Barn 2016).

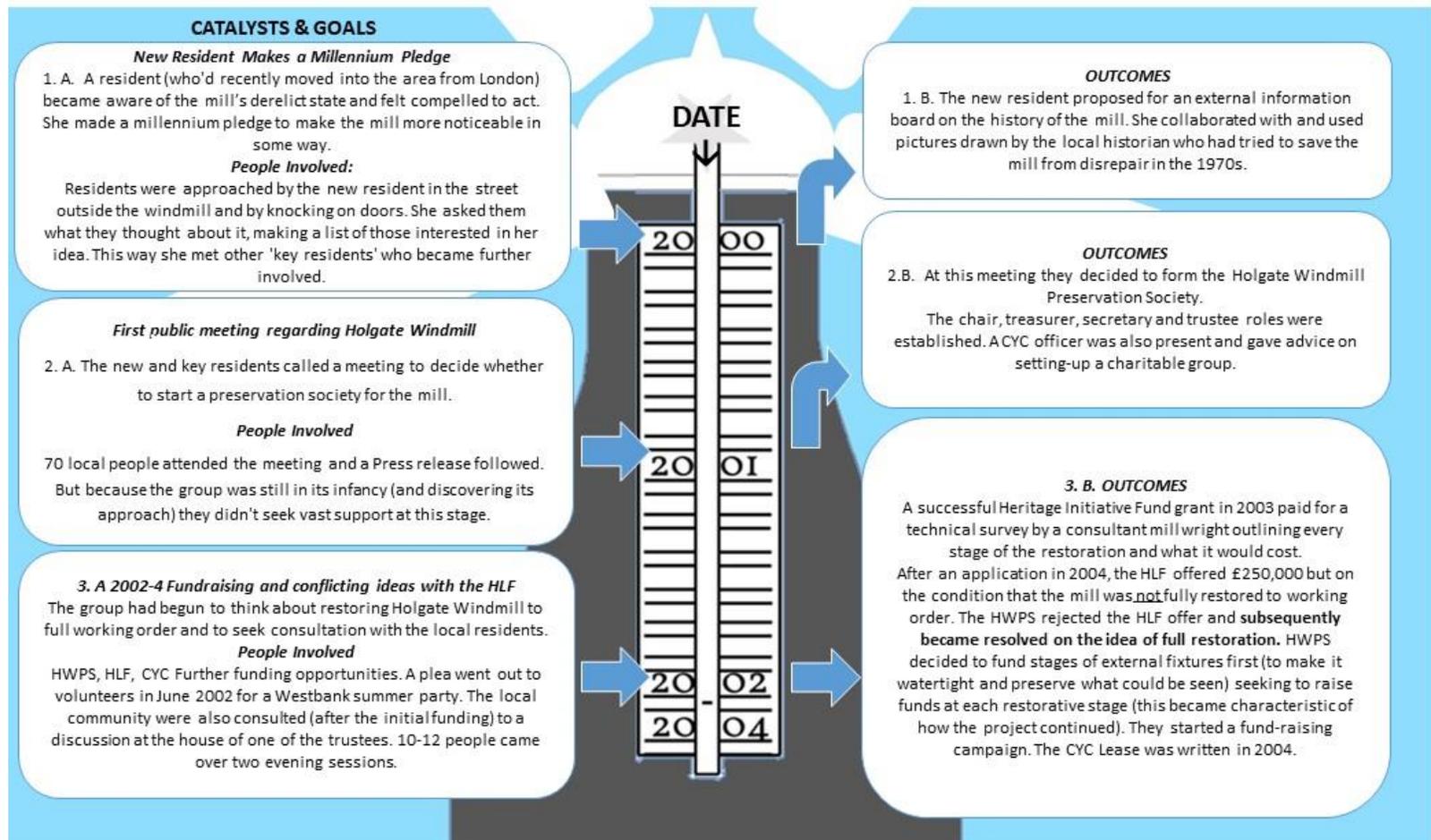


C.v Photograph of Tithe Barn PPG Minutes



C.vi Holgate Windmill Timelines

Figure 14. Holgate Windmill Timeline-1



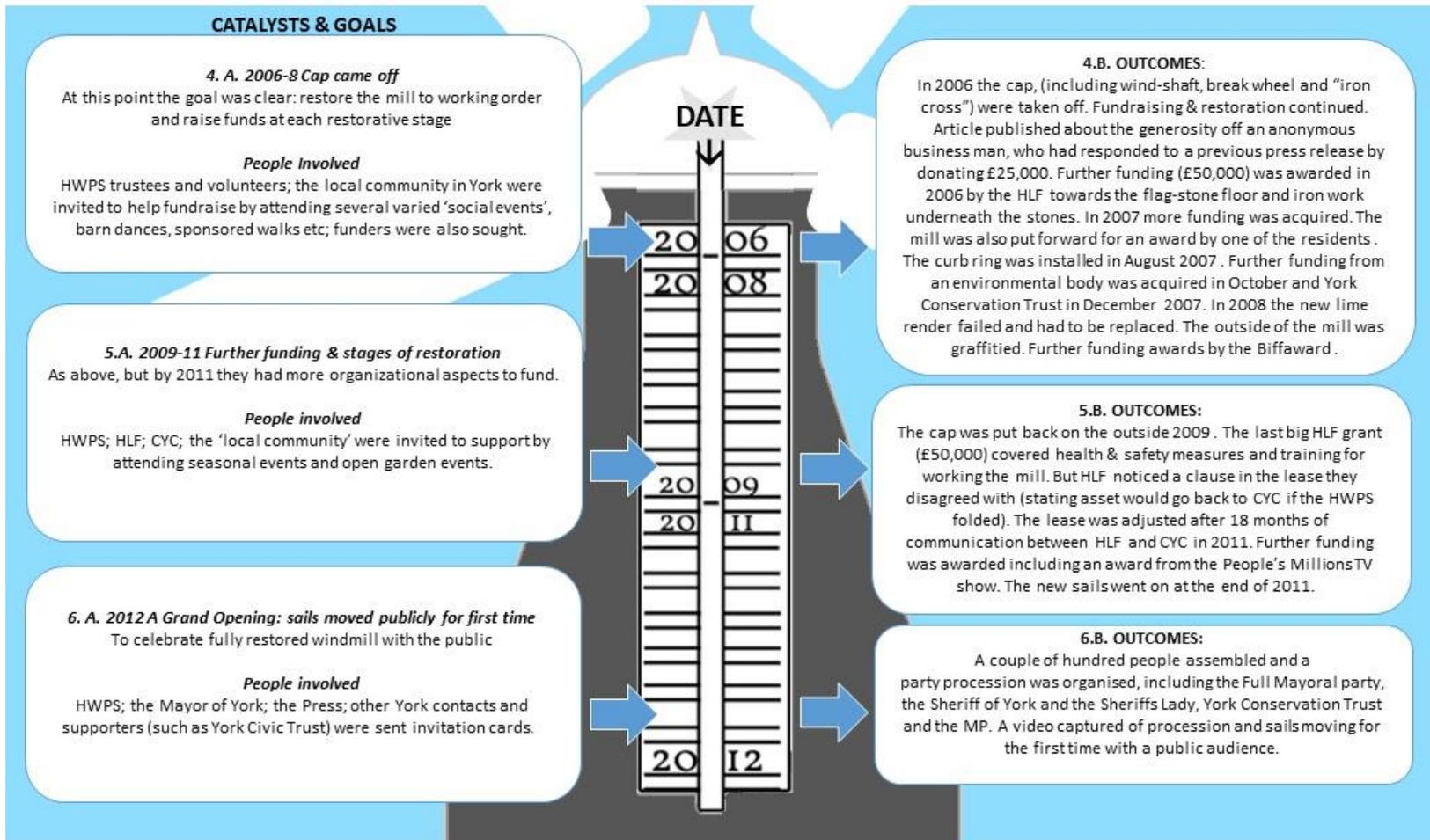


Figure 15. Holgate Windmill Timeline-2

C.vii Example of Feedback Comments from Trustees

HOLGATE WINDMILL

Table 6. Feedback comments and editing process of timeline

MOMENT (DATES needed)	GOAL/VISION?	OUTPUT/ACTION	PEOPLE INVOLVED	PEOPLE SOUGHT
<p>1a) 2000 First person- a new resident to the area...it was the millennium challenge, marked the year 2000.</p> <p>What got everybody galvanised was a lady who had moved to the area (come up from London) couldn't believe that there was a windmill which nobody was paying any attention to. At the time there were millennium pledges, do something for the area you lived.</p>	<p>b) Impression is the first vision was that there was a tatty remnant, something needs to be done, surprised if people put finger on a point and say let's make it a thing (more like make it safe first). Her idea was to draw communities attention to the windmill--looking better than it did. Almost beyond saving. Local Holgate historian, had petitioned to get the mill saved earlier in the 70s, but died after 2000. He'd had been driving force for a long time.</p>	<p>c) The lady didn't want to start enormous, so she offered information board. So that's what she did. Very nice history of the mill, put up there.</p> <p>Historian he'd done a lot of drawings. Put up panel on the mill, history little.</p>	<p>d) New lady, Historian</p> <p>In the process, talked to a lot of people (historian--he'd been very keen had tried to get ££ to restore in 1970, but very few funders, so although there was a lot of enthusiasm there was no money. but what he did do, was keep the idea in people minds.</p>	<p>e) Local community via New lady.</p>
<p>2a) DATE? 1st general meeting and 70 people turned up, in a local church hall. Had a presence from local council. At pretty grotty stage. The council stopped spending ££ on it for decade. Cap full of holes letting water in render falling.</p>	<p>b) People had different ideas about what stage they should restore it. Some thought just to do up what could be seen from the outside, sort out render, put a cap back on, keep it going. Others thoughts, could get machinery working without</p>	<p>c) New lady initiative came to gather called a public meeting 70 people turned up to the public meeting.</p>	<p>d) At meeting, chose a chair, vice chair, treasure, secretary, nucleus of people. Also discusses what people wanted to do.</p> <p>CYC, delighted to have it taken on. peppercorn CYC</p>	<p>e) DATE? Great affirmation was local business man (anon) put a cheque through door £25,000!</p> <p>Press release out, about restoration, asking for funds, that night, after the paper</p>

	<p>sails. others thought whole restoration. bit of ...lots of comment at what stage should restore it. Decided full restoration.</p>		<p>been very supportive and helpful.</p>	<p>went took a telephone call local businessman, "I would like to give you £25,000 towards restoration".... thought mistaken. Seminal moment, made all of realise that they were people that cared that much about the building, and if it could be repeated it would stand a good chance of what we want to do.</p>
<p>3a) DATE? First grant (25,000), the people millions. Then looking for further funding applications, HLF said ok, we'll 250,000 but pointless to get sails on. But the HW society wanted full restoration. DATE?: Once a decision was made to restore completely, we approached HLF. "Don't put sails, just machinery. Give you £250,000". From an external report, we knew it was going to be £550,000, so when HLF chap had been and gone we were a bit disappointed, HLF would give bundle of £££!</p>	<p>b) Had to think again after HLF offer. It was our architect Steve pots who said ok well rather try to did all in one project spilt it up, fit cap and outside. rather thinking about inside or sails. Try and restore what you can see.</p>	<p>c) People's million: That allowed the whole thing to get onto a very professional, do the rig set up formal way of working, get architect involved. This £25,000 it allowed the society to develop corporate identity. ----- Turned down HLF funding, never regretted it.</p>	<p>d) We all had an input (by this stage chairman, 2004-12) Our first chairman was a local vicar. Retired in 2004. Then next chairman had succeeded with heritage initiative funds applications successful that's why asked to take over. And was a Graphic designer: good presentation "if you can present ideas in a clear visual way, people sit up and take notice". My skills as a designer helped, putting pack together for perspective, could make me look attractive with photos and drawing--had done all my life. Did have several people on trustee list--architect had experience in conservation work, my experience as a</p>	<p>e) DATES? The only thing we did when we had to planning permission, we put letters through everybody's doors in the street, this is what to do. What do you think, would you like to see us? At his house. If you have concerns, or want to be involved. Social things opened wine, social and chatted. Most people seemed to think good idea, one or two people worried about parking, on open days. had to convince them. Windmill, not like the Viking center (not 1000 of people) would be manageable in terms of traffic. Did promise was in all our publicity we would suggest to people that people would park on Acomb road. That spread word,</p>

<p>Lease with CYC written in 2004. Planning permission obtained?</p>			<p>designer (had worked for heritage attractions), nice if we'd had a lawyer on! Needed a lease drawn up from the council. so we could start work on the building. Had to society had to set up and write a constitution. one guy said 'I knew a lawyer' Very big money £6,000. My own solicitor said done for less. One lady, great with people, events, meets and organise the visits. Some professionals, could put the skills in. Great strengths, different people.</p>	<p>started to get one or two people on board. Committee 15 trustees most of those at least 10 have been from the beginning.</p>
<p>4a) Putting the cap back on the mill. Cold end of November in 2009.</p>	b)	c)	d)	e)
<p>5.DATE? Acquired funds which come from a government scheme, Landfill tax. Every hole that is put in the ground they have to pay for every tonne put in, and gov allows landfill tax. Local project. A source. Landfill have to be in ten miles. Got something like £200,000.</p>	b) Full restoration-working mill	c) Getting enough money to fund stage 1. Funding happened in blocks. One of the chairman was brill at finding funders, getting them when £30, £50, £80,000 as it was needed. Applied as it was needed. Landfill tax administrations (Yorventure) Biffa. Good source of funding. Can make a claim on the tax rich source. And Biffa very nice people to deal with.	d) HW society, 2nd chairman	e) Got publicity. Uninvolved viewers. Mass majority. Wanted to get more young people involved, but another trustee says they can't--cloud cuckoo to get young person involved. So many volunteers "oh I would love to" (but then subsequently disappeared).

<p>And the sales going on. Week before Christmas best Christmas present 2011..</p> <p>Lease rewritten in 2011.</p>		<p>Want to know they've spent the money properly.</p> <p>DATE? Two lots of £50,000 from HLF, second one to tie up all the loose ends, nightmare,</p> <p>HLF were obstructive, nearly jeopardised whole project. Suddenly they picked up the lease, if the whole committee went under bus the windmill, would revert to the CYC, HLF didn't like it. 18months for HLF and CYC to agree.</p> <p>Installing the lightening conductor, you haven't had permission. Turning down some money. A lot of work done ourselves significant amount that they were serious and getting hands dirty and fundraising.</p>		<p>Invite people to events: Pancakes day, a Santa in the mill 300 children in 2weekends, several street parties, ideas come and go. Don't turn thing into annual events. Yard sale for the whole estate, yard garage sale paid.</p>
<p>6a) And then a grand opening June 2012, Mayor of York led us up the road, wonderful little thing on YouTube...Standing in the middle of the procession, and then the sales turned on the first time.</p>	<p>b)</p>	<p>c)</p>	<p>d)</p>	<p>e) Crowds of people watching people gathered, road closed and there were photographs staircases</p> <p>VOLUNTEERS for future events and fundraising:</p> <p>Going to update the website much more proactive what's</p>

				<p>going to happen. When you got volunteers it's hard to say can you do this better? Web person had babies, lost sight. Constantly battle over publicity funding. Tight on publicity. Begun to realise the website is by far the most valuable. Absolutely key to presenting ourselves. Fortunately have a huge archive of the restoration. Archivist and historian has done an exceeding good job for housing the archive. photographs. 1800s.</p>
--	--	--	--	---

7) Key Areas?

Where the mill is it's in a coherencies housing estate, which was built on an old grand house and surrounding farmland. 1st phase building 1930+1940s estate, filling the grand house and its lands, mill has become a focal point for that community, a lot of thing that the committee have put on that have drawn on this residential audience.

It is Holgate. Last remaining Mill in York, there are sites are of 20 mills during the 19th century flour for the local populations. Grinding animal feed for horses, lot of horse. Lot of these mills will have been servicing that industry. We're the last one of all those mills, and they were a really important part of York's history. Connected to a wider world of milling. up and down he country. it's a small world, they all know what's going on. It's a kind of brotherhood. of millers.

8) Opinions:?

Used to have system bit off putting for visitors put details down in a book. But now got a super duper till. Which talks to the treasurer's laptop, so everything including visitor numbers. (might have the books) "oh that was interesting" tots think its best climbing wall in York, windmill nuts, flour sales. to start asking people-is intrusive.

Become an icon for Holgate. In the past people had tried to restore and hadn't been successful. Felt this was maybe another attempt that would fail...when the sails went on, absolutely delighted, what had been a derelict became beautiful. Start to look at it with real pride "I come from Holgate where the windmill is". Press helped, word got round because of that. Group having real success. Interviews on local radio, interviewed several times on local radio. People did sit and take notice. Became very proud.

9) Changed area?

Put Holgate on the map. Was a fairly dreary place, one of the visitor attractions and particularly for local people. Yes, a lot of good. On that triangular wedge. Middle class home owner, quite affluent.

A small thing is that property prices have gone up. Because of the mills. I know that when properties come on the market, estate agents describe in the street where the Holgate also feature a picture of the mill as well. Very desirable street to live in. Other influences. Groups/projects in another the parts of the city looked at us and said if they can do it, so can we. Back house. Do something with cafe, history. Saw what we'd done, saw a need and an opportunity. there are other things as well, Foyw when they first started contacted us. Our influence spread.

C.viii Current Relationship with Locality (Holgate Windmill)

What is the building's connection to the surrounding area?

Holgate Windmill Trustee One

"The 20th century estate was imposed upon the Gutch estate and so the Mill stands as a last remnant of the 18th century period. The 1st phase building (in the 1930+1940s) filled the grand house and its lands. So there is no connection historically and actually, the way the mill rises up out of the estate is an indication of how the council felt about it. i.e. they couldn't knock it down, as it was a listed building, but they would build all around it until it became a roundabout."

Holgate Windmill Trustee Two

"It is Holgate. It is the last remaining Mill in York. There were 20 mills during the 19th century producing flour for the local populations and grinding animal feed for horses, lots of horses. Lots of these mills will have been servicing that industry. We're the last one of all those mills, and they were a really important part of York's history. It's connected to a wider world of milling up and down the country. It's a small world, they all know what's going on. It's a kind of brotherhood of millers."

Do you have an idea of the local opinion?

Holgate Windmill Trustee One

"We used to have a system (bit off putting for visitors) who were encouraged to put details down in a book. But now we've got a super duper till. Children also think its best climbing wall in York, and we can see from our produce (such as windmill nuts, flour sales) how popular it is. But to start asking people what they think when they are here—it is intrusive."

Holgate Windmill Trustee Two

"It has become an icon for Holgate. In the past people had tried to restore and hadn't been successful. People felt this was maybe another attempt that would fail...but when the sails went on, everyone was absolutely delighted. What had been derelict became beautiful."

People started to look at it with real pride "I come from Holgate, where the windmill is". The Press helped, word got round because of that. The group was having real success and were interviewed several times on local radio and voted for by the people on that TV show. People did sit up and take notice and became very proud."

"People coming from international places, but also down the street—often ask: are you local, they say no—Copmanthorpe/Strensall—and I say "oh that's local!" But people come from all the world over. Chinese and Japanese visitors find it fascinating."

Has the Holgate Windmill changed its surrounding area?

Holgate Windmill Trustee One

"It's put Holgate on the map. The area was a fairly ordinary place, now it's one of York's top small visitor attractions and particularly well visited by local people. Yes, it's done a lot of good."

Holgate Windmill Trustee Two

"A small thing is that property prices have gone up because of the mill. I know that when properties come on the market, estate agents describe this area as 'the street where the Holgate Windmill is' and also feature a picture of the mill as well on their listings. It's a very desirable street to live in."

Other influences include supporting other groups/projects in another the parts of the city. They looked at us and said "well if they can do it, so can we". i.e. the Backhouse. They want to do something with a historic building and turn into a cafe. Saw what we'd done, saw a need and an opportunity. There are other projects as well, FOYW when they first started, they contacted us. Our influence spread."

C.ix Archivist's Notes:

Notes on CYC: Courtesy of A. Cook (2017).

The Council paid for some work to be done in 1939 to replace cap and to make building safe but after that they put padlock on door and left building to its own devices. The millwrights did quote for new sails at that time but the work was not carried out, too costly? And low priority of work considering WW2?

I have oral history transcripts from several members of the public who, as small boys, broke in to the mill and played there in the 1940s and 50s.

Letter 9th October 1950 from leader 1st Acomb, York Boy Scouts wondering whether windmill "could be made available" as a scout HQ, reply from council that building completely unsuitable as scout hut.

The building became Grade 2 listed in 1954 but why and by whom I do not know although some mention was made of the fact that the machinery was virtually intact. The sail whips (main wooden strut down centre of sails) were removed in 1955.

The driving force in keeping the mill in the council's mind was [Mr. LD]. He was a retired geography teacher who lived [...] along Windmill Rise with a view of the mill. He spent several years researching its history and campaigning for its active preservative and restoration. He was an indefatigable campaigner and also promoted the existence hamlet of Holgate; researching its history and boundaries. He bought the 'Holgate' road signs out of his own money and wrote to the papers, estate agents etc. every time they incorrectly listed a place or house as being in Acomb rather than Holgate.

All of his material was donated to the mill on his death and now forms part of our archives. Sadly some had to be destroyed as it was very damp and mouldy but I saved what I could. I think the council correspondence formed part of [LD]'s collection as much of it reflects his constant haranguing of the council. The following is taken from this material.

Letter 27th February 1981 from Chief Architect CYC to unnamed councillor stating that information has been received from [LD] and the mill has been visited by members of CYC Department of Architecture "there is general agreement about the structural work which should be done over a period when finance permits."

Letter 8th March 1981 from York Excavation Group using the mill as their HQ and storage.

Minutes of Council meeting 5th October 1981; Chief architect gave details of work needed to make mill safe ; the floors had been removed "about fifteen years ago" and many of the structural beams were beetle infested and/or rotten "in view of close proximity of the houses on Windmill Rise it would not be possible for the sails to be reconstructed" The Department of the Environment had been approached but as the mill could not be "fully restored with sails" they would not make a grant.

As the mill retained its original machinery (dating from the 1859/60 refurbishment) it was important from an industrial heritage standpoint but clearly the council lacked the money to do anything more than conserve the fabric of the building itself.

There were various rumblings at the council through the 1980s; whether to continue funding essential maintenance, whether to try and dispose of it – sell or give to "amenity society" and whether to fully restore and open to the public.

Minutes of Council meeting 29th October 1984; offer received to purchase mill and to convert to residential dwelling. Survey of Windmill Rise residents carried out; results were keep in good repair 34, fully restore 13, convert to museum 3, private residence 6, craft workshop 2, demolish 1.

Planning permission refused due to need to keep Grade 2 listed machinery, to lack of parking for it as a dwelling and as a dwelling it would "adversely affect the amenities of the residents in the locality."

Letter 17th May 1985 from York Civic Trust "positive interest in the restoration of this building" but would want the council to use and run it subsequently. Council quoted problems with

future maintenance and management and "environmental disturbance" caused by mill being in residential street as objections to the plan

The restoration plan really got underway with the 'Citizens' Pledge Project' - residents of York registering pledges to their community to celebrate the millennium. The Page reads;

"[BC] Expectant mother, [BC] began hunting the history of Holgate Windmill as he Citizens' Pledge to the community. "It's one of the highlights of York's skyline." Says [BC]. Her search which began early in the year 2000 brought her into contact with [LD]. [LD] also has a passion for this landmark and had already created an ample portfolio on the windmill he calls "The Heart of Holgate". [BC], however, decided to take her quest further, with help from [LD] and Holgate Ward Committee, [BC] has raised funds to erect an all weather board explaining the history of the Windmill. Her work hasn't stopped there. It is unusual these days for a windmill to be nearly complete, and Holgate Windmill is very rare having 5 sails instead of the usual 4. "The Windmill hasn't been repaired for 60 years, and is beginning to deteriorate" says [BC] "It would be a great shame to let such a magnificent piece of history go to rack or ruin." With the help of Holgate Ward Committee a new group is to be launched in 2001 called the "Friends of Holgate Windmill. "I am also contacting organisations such as English Heritage to see if they would be interested in restoring the Windmill to it's [sic] former glory" explains [BC]. "My pledge started as one idea and ended up a project which will benefit the Windmill far more."

Many of the present day committee, [AB] included, joined the society then. [LD] died in 2003 so never saw his dream of restoration fulfilled although his wife stayed in contact with the society. [BC] stated that the mill had not been repaired for 60 years – not strictly true as maintenance was carried out.

Notes on Millers of Holgate

Then on 19th March 1931 Eliza Gutch died, aged ninety, and the future of the mill became even more uncertain. Eliza's funeral was held in York Minster and she was buried in York Cemetery with her husband John and son Clement who had died young. Her will was long and listed many items from the house, giving a picture of a wealthy, cluttered, Victorian household. It did not, however, mention the mill and just stated that all of the real estate should be sold and the money divided between her three living children and Clement's son John. She left approximately £33,000, the equivalent of over £1 million today. It has been suggested that Eliza had planned out the future of the housing estate that was to surround the mill but there was no evidence for that. The driving force behind the development seemed to have been her three surviving children: Bertha, John and especially Wilfrid. It would appear that we have them to thank for the preservation of the mill. **[17 possible Eliza Gutch grave]**

Wilfrid Gutch had been educated at Harrow and Cambridge and was a very successful barrister in London. He was a busy man and did not even live in York, so it would have been more convenient for him just to sell off the entire plot. The city was still expanding and needed new houses, but it would appear that he and his brother John, a doctor in Ipswich, designed the whole housing estate even down to the routes of the roads and the design of the houses. Wilfrid was obsessed with his family history and the road names on the estate reflect this passion. As well as the obviously named Windmill Rise other street names reflect family birthplaces such as Chelwood Walk, Tisbury Road and Grantham Drive. One is named St. Swithin's Walk after his mother, Eliza's, birthday on St. Swithin's Day.

The houses were built by builders F. Shepherd and Son Ltd. of Blue Bridge Lane in York. The grand house Holgate Lodge was demolished, as was the associated coachman's cottage, but the family wanted to preserve the mill. Work was underway on houses in the first street, Grantham Drive, by 1933. One has to wonder what Thomas and Rosa Mollett thought of the building site down the hill that was gradually edging its way towards their mill. This question can perhaps be answered by the fact that they had left the mill by the time of the 1933

electoral register and had moved to Sherriff Hutton to farm. The last mill in York had finally closed. A photograph taken on 28th June 1935 shows a derelict-looking mill. **[18 Holgate mill 28th June 1935]** Thomas and Rosa's house had recently been demolished and appears as just a pile of rubble.

The idea that the Corporation should take over ownership of the mill and preserve it in working order persisted. Several councillors agreed to the proposal in October 1938 although Councillor Hatfield thought that the money would be better spent in preserving more beautiful things. He claimed that there was "no beauty in this windmill, with five 'sticks' in the air." The decision was postponed while another proposal to buy the mill and turn it into a cafe was investigated. Eventually, after a stalemate between the Gutch family and the Council, the Lord Mayor, William Cooper, intervened and the council agreed to buy the mill. It took at least three conveyance documents before all parties were happy. The paperwork was finally signed on 2nd January 1939.

The mill was sold to the City of York for £100, which the Gutch family donated back to the Council for its repairs. The conveyance document stated that "the said piece of land and the Windmill thereon shall be preserved by the owner from time to time thereof as a place or building of local historic and artistic interest." Not quite the full working order and public opening that the family or Archaeological Society had wanted. In April 1939 the firm of R. Thompson and Son, Millwrights, from Alford, Lincolnshire did produce a quote for repair work. It was estimated that £277 14s was needed to "preserve the mill in its present condition" although the roof was in a poor condition and required "renewing complete". The cap was replaced but the outbreak of the Second World War brought further work to a halt. In 1940 there was a plan that it should become a home for two artists from Chelsea but this again fell through. By the end of the Second World War there were only six working windmills left in England so it was highly unlikely that the council would invest in returning Holgate to anything like working order. The mill became neglected while the nearby fields became the haunt of local children for games of football and 'Cowboys and Indians' in the long grass. Occasionally braver souls would sneak into the mill to explore or to collect pigeons' eggs.

Some interest in the mill was rekindled following a letter to the council in October 1953. Mr. Gordon Wright complained about the state of the mill as the smart new houses of Windmill Rise engulfed it. **[19 Holgate Mill 1955]**As a result of this an appeal for funds began in the York Evening Press newspaper in the following year. The millwrights R. Thompson and Son did carry out some preservation work at that time but, in his unpublished thesis of 1971, David Mason commented that a large proportion of the work carried out then required attention again. Further maintenance work was carried out during the 1970s. A report by the City Engineer in 1983 stated that the floors and beams were mostly rotten and that the general condition of the mill was "fast approaching the stage where continued maintenance of a minor nature will no longer be adequate and a major restoration will be needed if the mill is to be retained." Minor repairs were, again, carried out but money for a full restoration could not be found. A council plan to compulsorily purchase several of the surrounding houses to establish a park around the mill did not come to fruition. Likewise proposals to convert the mill into a house or to turn it into a scout hut were also rejected.

C.x Holgate Windmill York Press Article Analysis

Table 7. Frequency of Categories of Articles mentioning Holgate Windmill 2001-2017

Year	Article Mentions Mill & HWPS Plans (alongside other reports)	Article has Full focus on Mill & HWPS Plans (with comments from HWPS)	Readers' letters focused on or mentioning HW/HWPS plans	TOTAL
2001	1	0	0	1
2002	4	1	4	9
2003	7	3	2	12
2004	12	0	1	13
2005	3	0	1	4
2006	0	3	2	5
2007	1	17	2	20
2008	8	8	3	19
2009	1	6	0	7
2010	3	4	4	11
2011	5	6	1	12
2012	8	14	5	27
2013	16	11	1	28
2014	10	8	2	20
2015	5	0	3	8
2016	6	2	0	8
2017	3	2	0	5

Table 8. Frequency of Types of Images within Categories of Articles 2001-2017

Year	Article type	NO IMAGE	Historic image of mill (& other mills)	Mill & People post-2000 (either internal/external)	Mill post-2000 (EXTERNAL)	Mill post-2000 (INTERNAL)	Wide landscape view & Mill post 2000
2001	Article mentions		1				
	Article focuses on						
	Readers' letters						
2002	Article mentions	2	2				
	Article focuses on	1					
	Readers' letters	3					
2003	Article mentions	3	3		1		
	Article focuses on	3					
	Readers' letters	2					
2004	Article mentions	7	5				
	Article focus						
	Readers' letters	1					
2005	Article mentions	2	1				
	Article focus						
	Readers' letters	1					
2006	Article mentions						
	Article focus		2	1	6		
	Readers' letters	1		1			
2007	Article mentions	2	4				
	Article focus	2	1	10	4		
	Readers' letters	2		1	1		
2008	Article mentions	5		1			1

	Article focus		1	3	5		
	Readers' letters	1					
2009	Article mentions						
	Article focus	2		6	2		
	Readers' letters						
2010	Article mentions	2		1			
	Article focus	1		5			
	Readers' letters	3					
2011	Article mentions	3	4				
	Article focus	1		5			
	Readers' letters	2					
2012	Article mentions	4	1				1
	Article focus	3	1	13	4	1	2
	Readers' letters	6					
2013	Article mentions	10		2	1	2	
	Article focus	6	3	3	1		
	Readers' letters	1					
2014	Article mentions	9			1		
	Article focus		4	1	8		
	Readers' letters				2		
2015	Article mentions	2			1		
	Article focus						
	Readers' letters	3					
2016	Article mentions	3			1		1
	Article focus		1	1	3		

	Readers' letters						
2017	Article mentions	3					
	Article focus			1	2		
	Readers' letters						

C.xi Other York Asset Projects (in ‘becoming stages’)

The Fishergate Postern, Two Telephone Interviews & One Email With Volunteers Of Friends of York Walls.

Why did the Fishergate Postern Project start?:

FOYW Volunteer One.

Aim was to increase understanding the walls for tourism. Too much litter. Too little information about the Walls for visitors. Initially, FOYW began with the intention to pay attention to the walls as a whole. In particular there was a focus on Fishergate Postern. Early members thought it had great potential, being at the time spoilt by council rubbish. This focus increased, and they started to examine whether the tower could be used in some form, range of ideas included: museums/ community hub/café etc. Over the years ideas developed whilst the building was opened to visitors...There was only electricity, no water, no café, museum of the walls. In the interim (before restoration) different displays of the walls, of how the Roman and Medieval York walls were developed.

FOYW Volunteer Two.

There was an odd, a tension even between those who were focussed on project of Tower back into use, and those who were interested in the wider questions of the walls. Came to be symbolised by logo: the logo officially, fairly clearly placed Fishergate postern tower as the focus. Volunteer Two didn't like this and felt there was a disconnect between apparent aims and name, although he appreciate it wasn't a case of "capture the logo capture the organisation": rather that people had made an investment in time, and polished the logo design over time. The appeal of the Fishergate Postern was aimed was to improve and guarantee access core to the walls, the Tower is on the circuit could be seen part of the walls, and it was the most interesting part that wasn't open at the time. Nothing strange about that and so became an obvious aim. Agrees that Fishergate postern was an aim for the wider walls (which then subsequently got

focussed on and took up a lot of organisational energy). Aims are on [website](#) and have gone through several stages (CYC wanted this for lease). The organisation worked on becoming a charity, formulised aims to get them accepted. One of the objectives of the organisation was the opening up of Fishergate Postern.

FOYW Volunteer Three.

I believe it started out of a belief that not enough was been done to promote the walls, and preserve them as an attraction. The group started in 2011, a couple of years before I became involved with the Friends. Personally, I think the attraction of bringing a tower that had been closed for so long to the public, back into community use with regular openings was a key goal. Sometimes focussing on the whole of the walls seems a big task with a small number of volunteers, but the tower gave a focus to the group.

How has the Fishergate postern changed over time?:

FOYW Volunteer One..

It's developed from unknown square, to one that both volunteers and locals get excited about (quirky medieval building). Visitors have access to the experience what it must have been like in a medieval setting.

FOYW, have shifted from trying to make it a community resource more to the historical using that to leverage tourism, increase tourism. Often as a volunteer, sometimes people are more reluctant but go in if prompted by a volunteer, they come out grinning afterwards. Only 1/10 go in if no one on door, 70 % if a sheepdog person outside. Locals say walked past 40 years, never been in, and pour over the map. They experience the site and York in a different way.

FOYW Volunteer Two.

Activities have increased: all the talking, planning, and thought by the active members of the group have increased since the initial conception. Reason being there were more limits of what

you could do before you get the lease (1 year ago). The lease opens opportunity and is happening at moment. You don't spend energy trying to get the grant without the lease. And once you have electricity and light there more things you can do.

Also the departure of the councillor. He had great impact in small organisation, generating new ideas, constant input about what the group could do. When he left he ceased to be involved. Certain big projects such as the guide book, came to an end. Accidental individual impact. Changed the shape of the organisation. And then the direction worked more towards the tower.

FOYW Volunteer Three.

The tower receives many more visitors now than it did at first, thanks to better publicity and our social media presence (@yorkwallsfriend). This has in turn driven a need for better, clearer displays in the tower, and a walls guide for visitors to the city on our website. I think the tower remains largely as it was when I started, and many of us, myself included, are keen it does not lose its medieval quirkiness. That said, we need events to attract local visitors back (giving them a reason to visit more than once), hence we have participated in Arts Festivals and currently have a photo exhibition on at the tower. This engagement with other groups in the city is better now than at any point since I joined.

The Backhouse Project: Comments From Telephone Interview with Lead Volunteer:

Why did the Backhouse Project start?

Basic story is that out of adversity something can come out, and that can be a positive. Four years ago when it started, lots of local authorities were closing libraries for austerity measures, whereas previously parks were being open left overnight...I was worried that that might have detrimental effect (i.e. graffiti). Wanted to protect the park and maybe establish a park keeper. I was really concerned, I had moved to the area from the city of Birmingham. I set up a public

meeting, me and my husband, put leaflets, pounded the pavement, (drew from my background in broadcast journalism).

There was mileage in the fact that the park was a site of old plant nursery (James Backhouse). I found this out and became immersed in backhouse project to celebrate and acknowledge the work that he did. It was a ready-made story. The building was the focus of it: a derelict council building was ideal, something that we could transform as a centre for the surrounding park area. The idea flowered from there, we got crowd-funding, it was all going well.

Idea was also inspired by a significant person (always need to have to have a person to hang stuff on); this was Sir Tim Smit (Eden project). I found his vision empowering and wrote to him, got an answer back, quotes from him in the press, so I am keeping named people interested in/supporting the project; Sheila Hancock, Quaker, Judi Dench, Terry Deary (horrible histories).

Last November, we were just about to agree the asset transfer from the council....then the fire occurred and was big halt. Can't asset transfer a 'shell'. But the knocks have made us more to determined. Steps now are to renovate the building, as a heritage project, and salvage as much as we can anything that's there. The other three walls that remain are what remains from the building's time as the residence for the stablehand. CYC isn't as nostalgic and they do want to work with the new conception of the project. And actually since the fire we realised that there was a need for a new architectural plan...it's forced a lot of change dramatic way to force change, and revisit the plans. More interesting. Feasibility still relevant, as before but architectural plans will likely change.

How has the Backhouse project changed over time?:

It has always been for the community. A place of focus, sharing history and heritage. I'm really keen to record oral histories before the older ones go (a lot of older residents involved). Change happens, need to records.

Always been the same, all of the initial ideas in a way formed some kind of vision, all of those visions have never changed; children doing craft, art classes, older people meeting up, walking and having nostalgia chat. Ideal space for it to happen. None of that has changed. What has changed, after several executive and ward meetings, is that we have to start again with the project, sell it back to them after the fire, have to be pretty blunt, you can't change with the wind, you have to stick to what it always was.

You get that feeling that when you know when something is possible—you can't escape it, you see it everyday, you open your curtains in the morning. I walk through the park every day, not something you can forget, that it is what I can do today. One of the trustees from the windmill has given me some insight: "plough on, keep with the light, stay away from the naysayers and be prepared for the long haul".

Appendix D

D.i Contextual Discussion on Red Tower's Localities

1069 AD: The creation of the Fishpond

York's well-documented history spans:

- the Neolithic period (c.4000 – 2000 BC)
- the Roman period (c.71-400 AD) (in which early fortifications had a lasting impact on later ones and on street-scapes)
- the Anglo-Saxon period (in which Eboracum gradually ascended into 'town' status)
- and the Anglo-Scandinavian period.

But like Rees-Jones (2013, 2-11) this historical investigation focuses on the events after the Norman conquest in 1069AD. This is primarily because it is the year that the damming of the River Foss occurred—a key event in the shaping of York's City Defences and for the Red Tower. The damming was ordered by William the Conqueror, who had retaken control of the city after a Danish Rebellion and ordered his men to reconstruct the York castle on land just before the point where the two rivers join: this included the establishment of a water-moat around the motte. The construction of the fortified castle at this location is interpreted as an aim to stamp his authority on the overthrown yet rebellious Viking 'capital of the North' by establishing a centre of rule in the town (Rees-Jones 2013, 11, Rainger 2014). Obstructions were put in place to redirect the flow of water of the Foss which enters York from the north and joins the larger River Ouse in the south-east part of the city. The strategic act resulted in the raising of the water level by 2 meters, approximately 0.4 miles in a north-easterly direction from the newly constructed administrative center. A water-filled area known as the 'Kings Fishpond' (at its largest extent $\frac{1}{4}$ mile wide) was created between the edge of the (then non-existent) Layerthorpe Postern and Red Tower. This pond acted as a "suitable defense" (Palliser & Palliser 1979, 8, qtd in Wilson & Mee 2005, 58), as the water was not likely navigable by either foot or boat (and no further

defences were ever built). The Kings Fishpond heralded the new management of the city in a way that in tension with the current urban configuration: it destroyed several mills and it encroached on the urban Anglo-Scandinavian areas of Hungate and Walmgate (Victoria County History 1961, 506-10). Indeed, an archaeological investigation in 2003 suggests that there was active reclamation of the land from the waters of the Fishpond by citizens, undertaken throughout the mediaeval period by the dumping of materials (shell, wood and other organic matter) (YAT 2003, 6). The 'authoritative stamp' of the Fishpond was also reiterated in its protection: it became a royal preserve for water fowl and fish; 300 years later there was a penalty in place for 'fouling' the Fishpond of 100 shillings; and over many centuries it was supervised by 'keepers' (although this role seems to lack a certain kudos over the years) (Victoria County History 1961, 506-10, Wilson & Mee 2005, 58-9). Moreover, the Fishpond would have dramatically changed the landscape in a manner highly uncommon in England: only Stafford and Caernarfon also had fishponds connected to town defences (Creighton & Higham 2005, 40).

The damming of the Foss and the creation of the Fishpond therefore, was a hugely important event in the ongoing morphing of York's identity as a bureaucratic post-Norman town, but also in creating a new, vast water landscape on the edge of the busy urban settlement. This 'authoritative stamp' by William the Conqueror will have been a dramatic demonstration of power and ownership, physically transforming the Anglo-Scandinavian management of the town and indeed encroached upon on two urban areas including parts of Walmgate. That deposit and dumping occurred thereafter, as a way of reclaiming land, suggests that the Fishpond may have been rather in inconvenience over several centuries afterwards (YAT 2003, 6).

12th-14th centuries—Guilds & Boundary Making

Between the twelfth and fourteenth centuries, the development of the defences contributed to the further defining of York as a fully-fledged medieval town. As Grenville has highlighted (1997), archaeologists have considered a medieval town 'as such' if defences were present, with "a relatively dense population, a range of economic functions and a role as an administrative

and religious centre" (157; also Tracy 2000). Palliser (1997), drawing from Rees Jones (1987) highlighted that the move to build York's defences was parallel with an increasing emphasis of civic liberties and decision-making by guilds (88 & 100). Nationally, guilds (organised groups of craftsmen which shared a membership) were emerging as powerful systems of trade and governance. In medieval towns they eventually held municipal powers (as part of 'corporations') by acting as economically-regulated organisations (controlling the amount of work they did) and functioned in a decentralised manner from the state and monarchy (Rosser 1997, 7, Storck 2013). They led the construction of communal identity through their construction and use of public buildings, such as guildhalls and town halls (Giles 2000, Clark & Giles 2011, 249). Medieval decision-making in urban design has been categorised into messy stages of planning and delivery, (involving different individuals: lords, clerks, architects, surveyors etc) coordinated overtime by guild corporations (Rosser 1997, 7, Lilley 2007, 231). Thus, York's defences were *gradually* developed from the earth ramparts, ditches and wooden palisades to stone fortifications (around 1250) in a drive of 'self-assertion' held by a network of powerful citizens (VCH 1961, 510-20, RCHME 1972, 139-159, Rees-Jones 1987 & 2013, 132). Furthermore, whilst funding to the construction and maintenance of York's defences was supported by the monarchy, it was also supported through tolling market traders (VCH 1961, 510-20). A grant of tolls was made in 1226 and was levied at those wishing to trade in the city, i.e.:

On May 24th, 1226, the King granted towards the cost of enclosing York by Walls, tolls to be collected from Pentecost to Michaelmas on goods and animals brought into town for sale, each Yorkshire cart or waggon 1/2d. from other counties 1d. each pack of merchandise except wood sumpters (pack saddles) 1/4d. each horse, mare ox, and cow 1/2d, from ten sheep, goats or pigs 1d. five sheep, goats or pigs, 1/2d. each boat by Ouse laden with merchandise to be sold 4d.

(Benson 1930 [4]).

This arrangement of tolling was aimed at outsiders to the city particularly, for many centuries afterwards; country butchers and tradesman had to be registered until 1492:

In august of [1492] it was ordered that no foreign draper or unfranchised person coming into the city with woollen cloth to sell by retail, to go about hawking but to bring it to the Thursday market

(Benson 1930 [7]).

After 1250, there were regular grants of murage (tolls made specifically for the building of town walls) and at least eleven are dated between 1284-1391 (VCH 1961, 510-20, Knoop & Jones 1933, 39-40). Thus, the walls were in part visual symbols of the monarch's power and represented "fierce outward appearance of martial strength" (Grenville 1997, 157) but they were represented a more locally-wrought arrangement of gates, walls and towers used to mark the limits of boroughs and enabling thoroughfare, the control of passage/egress and tolling. As such, stone walls created a physical manifestation of what a town "thought it ought to be" and who got to be in it (Turner 1971, 16; also Creighton & Higham 2005, 34-5 & 37, Wilson & Mee 2005, 12). The steps toward this ambition were messy, drawn out and will have impacted specific places in York as shall now be discussed.

In the medieval period Walmgate was a major thoroughfare and with two medieval parish churches, St Denys and St Margarets (OSA 2007, 9; also Kümin 2016). Interestingly, the Walmgate area (between Walmgate Bar and the edge of the Fishpond) appears to be the last section of the stone walls to be built: within archives concerning the area of Navigation Road between 1154-70 and again in 1326, a boundary was referred to as the "king's great ditch or a ditch and mound"; in 1389, this boundary was re-termed as the "wall of the commonalty" signifying the physical development (Raine 1955, 13, VCH 1961, 510-20, Turner 1971, 113, RCHME 1972, 139-159). The addition of the stone wall is connected to a specific contract issued by the "Mayor and Commonalty" in 1345, showing that a Master Mason was paid £7 'per perch'

to build a stone wall 22.5ft high and 7-8ft thick in the Fishergate area with opportunity to build in the stretch between Monkgate and Walmgate thereafter (Raine 1955, 14, Turner 1971, 113, Rainger 2014). The planning of the eastern walls between the Fishpond and Walmgate Bar highlight the ongoing attempts by the developing city officials (from 1227 onwards) to define and govern the whole of York's perimeters—even if this did not happen in a systematic or neat way (VCH 1961, 510-20, Rees-Jones 2013, 134). Boundaries did not necessarily follow the city walls, and parishes were subsumed into the administrative borders in ways that were at odds with the community living there: one such problem was that the Walmgate community (within the York boundary) made constant use of the pastoral fields in Heslington (now placed in 'Yorkshire County') signifying a practical relationship between rural and urban spaces that was complicated when Walmgate was fully incorporated into York by the walls (OSA 2007, 8, Rees Jones 2013, 134-5; also Galloway 2007).

In addition, the reconfiguring of an urban/rural divide via the walls can also be extended to the management of defences proximate to the Fishpond and River Foss. The man-made water-filled landscape was a boundary but also a practical dilemma susceptible to elemental factors which impacted the urban areas within the walls: e.g. the Foss Bridge at the top of Walmgate was often "choked up with mud and debris" from the Fishpond, and in the later 16th century there were moves to enlarge the River Foss which had silted up (Raine 1955, 67 & 71). Furthermore, it has been argued that waterways (particularly rivers) were often seen as having a complex relationship with city walls in the medieval period; at once protecting, yet needing vigilance from flooding, from unwanted egress and trespass due to the ease of passing undetected (Rothausser 2009). Either way, the meeting of stone wall defences with this stretch of water and positioning of an 'end' structure is of interest. Rainger (2014) has put forward the possibility of a potential a timber structure or tower at the edge of the Fishpond between the 12th-14th century, drawing on evidence of a grant for timber fortifications made in 1215. VCH historians also suggest that there may have been a stone tower at some later point between the 12th-14th century (1961,

510-20). If so, it could be that having some form of defence structure near the Fishpond was an act of a “self-conscious” urban planning and that the fluid ‘edgeness’ of the fishpond—as a structure may have been on an island or promontory *in* the water (RCHME 1972, 139)—instigated a need to demarcate “a clear physical barrier” (Grenville 1997, 158-9). A structure either next to or in the Fishpond, may have signified attempts at the corporations in York to manage and reiterate the ‘authoritative stamp’ that the Fishpond had symbolised (despite and especially if the water in fact presented practical issues for the town).

A tower at the edge, or proximate to the Fishpond may have been a continuation of a statement regarding the control of the town—as symbolised through the ongoing construction of the defences, as established by increasingly municipal powers of York’s corporation. This control was economic and also demarcated the ‘edge’ of the Fishpond, affirming two man-made boundaries. And although there is little evidence to confirm a stone tower was built there in the 12-14th century, documentation does indicate that a later tower *was* erected in 1490. In which case, perhaps the points above can be maintained but attributed to a later date.

15th-16th centuries—A Red Brick Tower

As has been argued, ongoing building of the defences coincided with the development of fiscal roles of officials and a boundary making across York. This development is also connected to the material resources used; during the late fifteenth century the walls were gradually being reconstructed out of limestone by stonemasons, a highly influential guild (their official role in maintenance is signified by a list of city official responsible for the walls) (RCHME 1972, 139-159 & 174). Before his defeat in 1484, Richard III commissioned repairs to the defences. These were later enforced by his successor Henry Tudor (Rainger 2014). In 1490, the Corporation and Mayor of York commissioned the tilers to do “the king’s work” and construct a *brick* tower next to the edge of the Fishpond (RCHME 1972, 139-159).

The decision to commission the tilers and not the stonemasons had consequences that requires attention and contextualising. In the Tudor period brick flourished as a craft and particularly in the South of England was being used to construct buildings of status such as Hampton Court Palace and Eton College (Lloyd 1925 [1972], 15, Lynch 1994, 38, 2007 & 2012). Early examples of brick building in medieval defences include Norwich and Hull (Moore 1991, 211-2). Notably, in this period the Tilers and Bricklayers Company also sought guild status in comparison to the stonemasons, but their aim remained obstructed because employers preferred to avoid the restrictive bureaucratic guild-rules as bricklaying gradually became more "important in the building process" (Lynch 1994, 41). Incidentally, a far more dramatic obstacle to the bricklayers occurred in York in 1491. The stonemasons of York dissented against the bricklayers' commission and it is argued that they were territorial about work on the walls being allotted to others. As seen in complaints from the tilers asking for protection from the York Corporation, the stonemasons were said to have threatened them and stolen or broken their tools. Eventually, the tiler John Patrick was killed by masons William Hindley (then Master Mason at the Minster) and Christopher Horner. They were charged but then acquitted, again, reflecting the high status of the York masons at the time (Harvey 1984, 138).

Attribution of the act of violence to a general craft division or rivalry requires discussion. Although murder by stonemasons is indeed embedded into the mythical legacy of stonemasonry (i.e. the biblical narrative about the death or injuring of Hiram Abif, working on King Solomon's temple, after not divulging the secrets of his prized masonry skills), the idea that guild divisions are inevitably associated with acts of extreme violence is questionable. Some have posited that guilds exacerbated divides between rich and poor classes (Cohn Jr 2013, 180—he is however unclear in a later example of conflict between craft workers in London, see 185). Other examples include the conflict between Grocers and Goldsmiths in London in 1378 (Nightingale 1995, 255-6) and the murder of the 'horner' Robert Baron by four goldsmiths in

1396 (More 1932 [2017], 234). Recorded examples of guild conflicts are considered “rare although not unprecedented” (Prescott 2017).

Examining the ‘motives’ of the York stonemasons further I put forward the nature of the mason marks in relation to York’s walls. Although parts of the walls were developed at different times and moved from other buildings (RCHME 1972, 34-55) essentially the masons mark was used to signify work completed by particular masons, as part of a ‘billing’ process (Tyson 1994). Masons work was connected (and instigated) by the elite and the powerful; construction was a capitalist activity of both the monarchy and Church and this in turn afforded the masons high status (Knoop & Jones 1933, 4). The mason’s relationship the York’s walls may have been deepened because their marks and the marks of the fraternal predecessors were inscribed within its fabric. This is not the strongest argument however and historians have demonstrated that English stonemason and bricklayers would often be paid to do the same work and had interchangeable skillsets; thus ‘roles’ were blurred (Moore 1991, 233, Tyson 1994, Lynch 2007, 28). It is better to focus on stonemasons’ kudos alongside their wider administrative powers. Moore has highlighted that in York a “craft distinction was also displayed in appointments as Common Mason of York: two of the seven” being bricklayers rather than masons (1991, 233). Furthermore, guilds were often at odds with their more virtuous Christian values, in some cases ‘immoral’ behaviour by guilds have been noted (Rosser 2015, 46). Indeed, Harvey (1984) has indicated that Hindley and Horner were disruptive personalities in positions of power, Horner particularly is noted as being very volatile and outspoken during his time in office (138). Thirdly, the tilers’ wages were not regulated until 1563 when the State of Artificers was passed which laid down the national framework for wage fixing and labour control for over two centuries (Woodward 1980, 33; also Lloyd 1925, 17). As they were paid less than masons the lack of standardisation *may have been seen as threatening* for the same reasons outlined above: it made them an easier craft for employers to work with and thus undermined the Masons’ historic dominance over the walls. Lastly, Palliser argued that the masons were dwindling in numbers in York (church building

having been slowed by the Reformation) and thus put pressure on the need to be commissioned work (1979, 171).

The dispute between the masons and the tilers is an example of a rare case of conflict, a spark within glowing embers of tension at the time. However, what is perhaps more puzzling (clouded by the intrigue of the murder) is why a brick tower built in that location of the walls in the first instance. Did it have anything to do with the fact that Walmgate was in the 16th century one of the poorest wards of the city (Palliser 1979 qtd in Dean 2004, 6) and so a 'cheaper' building was deemed suitable? Was it because of the Fishpond and brick seemed less costly/more durable to water (being more porous)? This would seem most practical, except for the fact the Red Tower was developed on top of a previous stone foundation. Thus, these questions unfortunately go answered. In 1511, the name of "Red Tower" is first mentioned when artillery was assigned to it (RCHME 1972, 139-159) and it remained (still does) the only brick building on the city walls.

15th-18th Centuries—Maintaining The Walls: An External Or Localised Civic Duty?

The building of York's Stone Walls took time and were beset with obstructions through both damage from attacks, lack of finances and lack of upkeep in times of peace (Knoop & Jones 1933, 39). As discussed by the recent work by Webb (2015), in consulting the Council's House Books between the late 15th and 18th centuries, there were several official roles that dealt with the ongoing maintenance of the walls enforced by the corporation, including not just Common Masons, but 'Muremasters', 'Common Husbands', and City Stewards (187). In 1487, the role of muremasters became officially recognised as an office; four men were elected annually every January 15th to become custodians of the city walls and to swear (under oath) to:

dilygently vewe and survey the walles of the same and also make reparaciones of the said walls ther as neyd ys by the comaundment and advyce of my lorde mayor.

(RCHME 1972, 34-55).

This role was undertaken by tradesmen or guild craftsmen; their taking oath signifies the importance of occupying offices within public service as part of civic duty (Kermode 1998, 46). Theoretically, the concept of modern citizenship and civic duty (established through freedom to pursue economic interests, civic involvement and guild relations) emerged within the late medieval and developed in modern period have long been discussed (Weber 1927 qtd in Kalberg 1993, 92, Heijden 2012). Moreover, the role was linked to civic power structured within local authorities; Palliser (1979, 71, qtd in Webb 2015, 187) argues that the office of muremaster formed part of 'a recognized ladder of promotion' in sixteenth century York. Election as muremaster or bridgemaster could lead to election as chamberlain, leading to the appointment to the Common Council, then election as sheriff, followed by elevation to the Twenty-Four, the appointment as alderman and finally, election to the mayoralty. And yet, it is also discussed that civic duties were not necessarily valued by a level of professional standardisation (by training in a specific trade) but rather, an individual level of commitment and hands-on experience (Heijden 2012, qtd in Webb 2015, 188). For example, the muremaster roles (1487-1626) were undertaken by those working in guilds that did not pertain to working with the fabric of the defences (such as shoemakers, tailors, and brewers) (RCHME 1972, 174-5). However, the concepts of medieval "citizenship, collective interest and communalism" (Heijden 2012, 3), particularly in relation to the maintenance of the walls would, here too, exacerbate tensions within guild relations (which resonates again with the murder discussed above). It is evident that the muremasters role was considered tedious work, and the Corporation was required to enforce the role onto York's citizens and particular craftsmen. As Webb demonstrates, in 1557, the Corporation preselected four (reluctant) muremasters from the Guild of Cordwainers (shoemakers) (2015, 189). When the selected cordwainers did not accept the job, they were imprisoned and disenfranchised from the city until two men accepted the oath, whilst the other two were required to pay a fine so they could be re-enfranchised as traders (189). Moreover, Webb indicates an historical discrimination, and association with cordwainers with riot, and idleness, via work by Swanson (1980). Twice the

muremasters office was allocated specifically to cordwainers and twice it was abolished, highlighting the administrative burden of this role (RCHME 1972, 174-5). However, not much is known regarding why the muremaster role was attributed to those deemed 'less-reputable' by the council and why, to the cordwainers, it was an unwelcome burden despite the risk of imprisonment and expense on the one hand and the opportunity for civic promotion on the other (Webb 2015, 190-1). Within Council archival records it is hinted that the:

annual officers and the Duty of their Offices very troublesome they were negligent in...looking after the common works and reparations, so they were discontinued, it being found by experience more for the advantage of the Corporation to continue officers of experience with salaries than have young others for nothing

(RCHME 1972, 34-55).

Webb (2015, 194) points out that during the 1560's the Corporation paid for maintenance work to the walls by expert masons (including one Christopher Walmesley who was not a freemason of the city) but also that other offices (including the aldermen, chamberlains, bridgemasters and 'wardens' of the specific wards) which participated where the muremasters had been negligent. Eventually, the office of muremasters was abolished in 1626 and the office of Common Husbands, which had been established in 1585, became to be further relied upon. This heralded an ongoing professionalisation of the wall maintenance role, and it became a salaried and individualised form of 'contracting' between husband and council which covered longer terms and wider, technical aspects of civic repair work. Notably between 1644-1676, glazier Edmund Gyles's longstanding work shaped the role of wall maintenance, extending it to civic buildings, accruing him more power and autonomy within the council (Webb 2015, 213). However, subsequent husbands were not as successful for various reasons; as a result, this office was also abolished in 1710 and the Wardens were once again to undertake maintenance duties, until 1734 when the City Stewards were established (RCHME 1972, 174-5). Arguably, the allocation of

maintenance to the Wardens at several points during periods of administrative weakness would appear to indicate an unofficial localising of civic duties into demarcated spatial areas. Webb recognises that although numerous offices, controlling different remits of York will have been involved in the maintenance of the Walls (which became a growing concern of the Corporation), the accounts of muremasters and city husbands do not exist: as a result little can be said of the “wider civic building work” (2015, 216). As such, he suggests that “the utilization of the walls across the civic strata needs to be considered further” (2015, 217).

During the later medieval period, York’s Corporation cultivated civic power yet also enforced civic responsibility with regards to the maintenance of the walls, a contradiction that is clearly at odds with some of the groups of citizens who avoided the role of muremaster at all costs (i.e. the shoemakers who refused to take up the role). Moreover, I find it of interest the work of local wardens would have picked up the reins when more official roles such as the muremasters were not filled, or that external experts had to be ‘brought’ in. This indicates that both external and localised roles functioned as a support for wall maintenance, a highly interesting parallel to contemporary devolution trends.

17th-18th Century—Red Tower Before & After The Civil War

During the mid-seventeenth century, the Red Tower was used as part of the defences against the threat of the Parliamentary forces and the Scots during the Civil War. In 1642, the city walls were repaired and further earthworks created (RCHME 1972, 75-6). However, maps (1610 and 1694) indicate that the Foss was starting to shrink and silt up, especially during summer months, or in dry weather (Wilson & Mee 2005, 59). This marshy landscape acted as only a minor obstacle for the Parliamentarian Army trying to access the city; indeed, after bombarding and laying siege to York in early July 1644, the Parliamentary forces decided to infiltrate the city via Layerthorpe Postern (due to the lack of water in the adjacent ditch) and thereafter bridge the Foss (RCHME 1972, 84). Accounting for this move and despite an initial stand by the Lord Mayor Sir Thomas Glemham on July 7th, the city fell and articles of surrender were signed on 16th July

(RCHME 1972, 85). Much of the city and its walls, including the Red Tower, were damaged by musket fire and canon blasts during the Civil War attacks.

And so much of the walls had to be repaired. This was particularly because during the period after the Restoration of King Charles II, there was a heightened trend in travel writing and an increase in the touring and consumption of urban life—or an ‘urban renaissance’ (Borsay 1990 & 2003, 2, Glennie & Thrift 1992). Further information about the upkeep of York’s walls can be gleaned from such travel writing, for example: the travel diarist Thomas Baskerville noted that the wall and castle were “‘constantly kept in good reparation”” (RCHME 1972, 102). The increase of ‘viewing’ cities for leisure was impacting the way York was managed: between 1719-1731 many ‘beautifications’ of the walls occurred to cater for touristic activities and the makings of a promenade was established between Lendal to Monk Bar with a brick pathway (104). The walls were evidently not wholly completed at this time: Daniel Defoe, touring the whole country, made comment that the ruin of “demolished fortifications” and the “slighted” walls were aesthetically pleasing (if impractical) (Defoe 1725, qtd in RCHME 1972, 100). Contrasting with this positive view of York, in 1736, Sir Francis Drake, refers to the River Foss as “being in the summer little more than a stinking morass” (Drake 1736, qtd in Wilson & Mee 2005, 59). It is also noted that views of Walmgate and Foss aspect are not popular with artists at this time (Butler 1978, 41). Drake’s map shows the Red Tower plainly on the edge of a rural area, with open plots of land between itself and St Margaret Church and Walmgate (Brown 2012, 201).

In September 1745, the success of Jacobean army in Scotland led to fears of fresh attacks and steps were undertaken to again, fortify York. This included overhauling the defences and the City Husband was charged with repairing the wall between Walmgate and the Red Tower. However, at the time, commentators still considered the walls too weak to withstand attack by the rebels. Luckily for York, the rebels were defeated. Only £310 remained out of the £2,655 funds sent to support York and only £38 had been used to repair the walls (the rest had been spent on volunteers’ subsistence) (RCHME 1972, 112). Despite some moves to make parts of the walls

promenades, the Red Tower had allowed to become a roofless ruin (Rainger 2014). Lastly, at the end of the 18th century, as part of a nationwide trend in canalization, works towards the Foss Navigation had begun and opened in 1794, although this project was eventually met with problems (RCHME 1972, 18).

Two points regarding the locality of the Red Tower here; firstly, that the Fishpond will have been a weakness in the Corporation's eyes especially during the Civil War and the Red Tower demonstrably was not a strong enough fortification to cope with the onslaught. Secondly, after the Walls lost their military purpose, the area around Red Tower particularly been neglected and subsumed into decay. Other parts of the walls in the city begin to be re-configured to suit a new capacity (that of touristic leisure). Yet to the west and east of the Red Tower lay the marshy area of a forgotten fishpond, the problematic Foss, and the bustling Walmgate area (which now also included a cattle market) (RCHME 1972, 481-491). This contrast in localities becomes clearer in the next century.

19th Century—Wall Restoration Movement

In the year 1800, a ninety-year feud begins concerning the upkeep of the Walls. The business-minded York Corporation at that time were trying to manage a population increase and felt the Walls were hindering York's economic prosperity (RCHME 1972, 117-118). York was no longer seen as a prosperous or fashionable place and its markets were in decline (Curr 1984, 26-27). In 1807, the Archbishop of York successfully sued the Corporation after they tried to demolish Skeldergate (28-9). Disputes continued to be fought over the upkeep of the walls between 1820-30's; influential citizens such as William Hargrove, Jonathan Gray, William Camidge and William Etty drew attention to the concept of the walls as a public, touristic promenade, and a complete circuit around York (Curr 1984, 29). In 1829 a Wall Restoration Committee is established, 30 members from the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, the Minster, businessmen and moreover, members from the Corporation itself (29). The barbicans are agreed to be taken down, all except Walmgate Barbican (then a rarity) (31).

A drawing by George Nicholson of Red Tower in 1825 shows further repairs have occurred during these disputes (Rainger 2014). Between 1831-52, parts of the Walmgate stretch of City Wall had become particularly ruinous and used to build local sheds and pigsties, with a manure heap in Navigation Road part of the walls (Curr 1984, 31). The area of Walmgate formed as a densely packed back-to-back terrace houses and was still considered an area of poverty and prostitution (Finnegan 2007, 119). In 1826, the cattle market (then expanding) had been moved to outside the Fishergate and Walmgate stretch of Walls; here Long Close Lane was built (the Red Tower is at this time being rented as a stable for horses) (Wilson 2006, 55, Rainger 2014). At this point, to the north of the Red Tower was the marshy fishpond, to the east were mainly fields and beyond these a brick kiln, the immediate west gardens and a linen factory, whilst to the far west and south, the area of Walmgate (Dean 2004, 6). The Wall Restoration Committee felt a restoration of the Walmgate stretch of walls would rehabilitate the adjoining ill-reputed area of Walmgate and indeed, six councillor's of Walmgate had previously demanded this part of the walls be reconstructed in 1839 to encourage visitors (and their money) to this part of York (Curr 1984, 32). But this section of the walls was still considered problematic due to issues in the surrounding landscape and certain social dynamics.

The 'lay of the land' at this point is as follows: in 1845, the Foss Navigation fails and the stagnation of the river is partly to blame (RCHME 1972, 118); the marshland had been continually used for dumping refuse and rubbish for centuries (Dean 2003, 6, Evans 2004, 7, Brown 2012, 92). Around this time, potato famines caused an increase of Irish immigrants within Walmgate and they lived in highly cramped conditions (Beechey 1976, RCHME 1981, 18, Wilson 2006, 96). By then the 1832 Reform Act and 1835 Municipal Corporation Act were beginning to affect the actions of the York Corporation (although how effective they were can be questioned, as York had initially petitioned against reforms, and thereafter voted in the infamous and anti-liberal George Hudson, the 'railway king', as Mayor three times) (VCH 1961, 268-269, Moret 2015, 285, Morris 2017, 31-2). Either way, in 1852, following recommendations and in line with a

new health reforms such as the Health Act 1848 (Chandler 2013, 71), York Corporation purchased the Foss Navigation Company. In 1853 they drained the fishpond and connected the sewers so that refuse was directed away from the rivers and out of the city (RCHME 1972, 460-472). The emerging land was named 'Foss Islands' in 1853 (VCH 1961, 460-472, Wilson 2006, 57), although it seems this name may have already been in use before the draining (Pearce 1841, 117). However, in 1855, unsatisfied with the state of the area, the famous Quaker Joseph Rowntree argues that Walmgate suffered from bad living conditions, exacerbated by the keeping of the Walmgate Barbican and Walls (causing difficulty for traffic, trade and the now expanding cattle market). This he argued appealed middle-class sensibilities and did not practically serve the interests of those living and working in the area. He highlighted that the wish to recreate the walls as the 'setting of the 'gem' of York in fact highlight stark class divisions and living conditions (Curr 1984, 33-34). This view was supported by Board of Health who declare the walls around Walmgate to be "destructive of health of those who live near them" due to lack of air circulation:

...[T]he Board of Health Committee, acting on a report which also recommended culverting the Foss between Layerthorpe Bridge and the Ouse, proposed to remove 'the whole or such part of the city walls between Walmgate Bar and the Red Tower (including the Red Tower) as may be considered requisite to improve that locality'. [...] It was argued that 'the walls in question had no particular historic interest about them and had been little noticed until the proposed improvement in their neighbourhood had been projected'.

(RCHME 1972, 7-34).

However, by then many citizens had vested interests in the tourism industry that restored Walls could bring and ultimately, the call to bring them down near Walmgate was dismissed (VCH 1961, 510-520, Curr 1984, 34).

Whilst the lands around the Red Tower were disputed and altered, William Pumphrey's photograph shows that the small building had had repairs in 1853 (and this is likely taken before the Foss was drained, as a body of water can be viewed to the right of the image). In 1857-8 George Folwer-Jones, an architect, carries out a full reconstruction of the Red Tower with tile roof, new Victorian bricks, and dormer windows (Rainger 2014).

The localities around Red Tower continued to change; the Foss Islands Road was built adjacent to the walls sometime between 1852-1864 (YAT 1999, 5, York Maps 2017). In 1879, the Foss Island Branch line was created (not for public use) to serve the expanding cattle market and the Rowntree factory in Haxby Road (VCH 1961, 472-481, Wilson 2006, 57, Rowntree Society 2014). The linen factory becomes a depot and along the walls further market pens are erected between 1875-1904 (£14,164 spent in total) (Benson 1930, [19]). According to Curr's research, key commentators in York saw the subsequent "squalor of Walmgate as the price of progress" (1984, 34). Eventually, in 1887, a Liberal group of eight local business owners (including for example a butcher and baker) claim the walls for working-class citizens, highlighting the view that full restoration would bring money into all parts of the city (36). This bolstered the Wall Restoration cause and in 1889 the complete restoration of the Walls, including the Walmgate stretch, was celebrated by the whole city and led by the York Corporation (36). The Foss Navigation also received a new lease of life in 1888 and began to make a small profit servicing the nearby factories and warehouses (VCH 1961, 472-481).

Interestingly, during an 89-year period starting from 1800 greatly impacted the Walmgate, Walls and Foss Islands localities, through retention, restoration and in dramatic change. It seems that the Corporation was at first renegade in its actions towards the walls, thereafter divided in its opinion on wall restoration, and eventually responded to the values of others including the Minster, local businessmen and councillors in seeing the touristic opportunity that fully restored wall represented. Interestingly, Red Tower's initial decay as part of the walls and eventual restoration reflects the prioritisations held by the Restoration movement and others (i.e. local

councillors) to incorporate ill-reputed Walmgate as part of the rest of the city. However, as Joseph Rowntree argued this was impractical for those living there; more intervention was needed to improve the area (and this included bringing down the walls). Whilst this did not come to fore, the Corporation had made some improvements to the area, i.e. by draining the Fishpond. Consequently, at the end of the 19th century the areas surrounding Red Tower formed two specific kinds of locality; there was a new industrial urban landscape with freight trains on Foss Islands, and a place of bustling trade, livestock management, and dense living quarters (still linked to bad repute and conditions) in Walmgate.

1901-1939—Slum Clearance in Walmgate

In 1901, Walmgate remains an overcrowded home to the poorer residents of York; BS Rowntree, the son of Joseph, refers it to as a place of 'poverty'. His own seminal research shows them living below 'poverty line' with high illness and death rates (Roberts 1997, Harrison 2015, 77).

Moreover, after the First World War (1914-18), there were nationwide housing shortages and it became clear that men living in poverty had not been fit enough to enlist as soldiers (. These factors (among others not covered here) prompted a movement resulting in the 1919 Housing Act (and the beginning of plans to build council housing as part of the eventual emergence of Britain's Welfare state) (Schifferes 2005). Perhaps due to Joseph Rowntree's work, York Corporation was already on board with these policies. In 1914 York's Health Committee had already commissioned a report by E Smith to demolish houses in the Walmgate area (297 out of 1067) (Mallyon 1985, 6). York Corporation upheld that housing should not be damp, should have suitable lighting and ventilation, water supply and places for washing (6), although this definition of good housing was neither consistent, nor set up as an official law until 1954 (7). In the 1930's demolition became easier with the introduction to compulsory purchase and clearance orders and this resulted in the displacement of thousands of people from their homes (34). In total 544 buildings were demolished and approx. 1,800 people were moved into council-owned houses (37).

Although slum clearance was occurring during this period, Walmgate remained a bustling place, with the ongoing cattle-markets, Irish community, and many public houses (approx. 30) (Roberts 1997, 5, Wilson 2006, 51-95 & 119). The area still held its reputation: the pubs accommodated vibrant social activity, fighting between soldiers and Irishmen, and prostitution (Harrison 2015, 80-2). The presence of the cattle market was prominent: the size of the market was roughly "seven acres and the accommodation for cattle was 7,680, for sheep 9,465 and for swine 300." (Wilson 2006, 55).

The Red Tower remained as it was left by the G.F. Jones restoration as shown from a photograph in the 1930's. There is little information as to whether it is being utilised at this point.

On the east side of Red Tower, the power station is based at Foss Islands, having opened in 1900:

Electricity is supplied for industrial and domestic purposes by the York Corporation Electricity Committee. The Corporation's Power Station at Foss Islands Road is equipped with the most modern generating plant of more than 20,000 h.-p. in addition the Electricity Undertaking has installed hydro-electric machinery at their Linton-on-Ouse Works, having an output exceeding 1,100 h.-p.

(Raine 1924, 15)

Alongside the power station a refuse depot is constructed, with a large incinerator (known as the Destructor, which also opened in 1900) to deal with waste disposal (VCH 1961, 460-472).

Thus, by the Second World War, the role of York Corporation, in line with the reforms from the previous century, had changed from insular business-minded decision-making to that of welfare provision (Crewe 2016). As a result, to the east of Red Tower, Foss Islands with its the waste depot, power station and non-passenger railway could be described at this point as the 'utility sector' of the city. Whilst on the west side, the homes of Walmgate are slowly being taken down

or improved. However, by the end of the Second World War, the role of local and municipal government was already beginning to be encroached upon (Crewe 2016).

1950s Onwards—Commercialism

In this period, we see most prominently the rise and fall of councils in England, and major restructuring of the organisation of local government, which in impact the way that land is developed in urban areas.

After the Second World War, the city was reaping the benefits from the tourism industry (statistics from York Castle museum shows a rise of visitors from 110,000 in 1946 to approximately 352,000 in 1957) (VCH 1961, 308-310). How this would affect the Red Tower (as part of the walls) is unknown, but the tower likely had maintenance works completed by the Corporation including the creation of the 'horseshoe wall' (York View 2017a). This occurred alongside the development of the Rosemary Place, Rosemary Court and Navigation Road council housing (for those displaced from Walmgate) on the open plots of land directly opposite Red Tower (Wilson 2006, 4). Their completion is confirmed by aerial maps suggest the work was completed by 1962 (York View 2017a). By 1970, other council housing was being built the other side of Walmgate (CUCAP 2017). The Corporation Depot (next to the Foss and Foss Islands Road) and Bus Depot (on the west side of Navigation Road) are also visible from 1971 aerial maps (York View 2017b).

Despite this dramatic redevelopment of the area, in the 1970s there was still a strong Irish community, a vibrant social life including weekly ceilidhs, annual May Day & St Patricks Day celebrations, social clubs, and the Irish National League Club (Wilson 2006, 30 -35 & 107). However, in 1976 the cattle market buildings and pens are demolished and the market is moved to Murton (Wilson 2006, 55, Alan Baxter Associates and Historic England 2011, 343). Much of Foss Islands is occupied by the (power station) to the north and the network of rail lines from the Foss Rail Branch and the freight depot to the south of the until there are replaced by retail

development in the late 1970s (YAT 2002, 5). As seen from a collection of photographs, Walmgate has remained a busy high street with various shops and restaurants throughout the 1980-90s (York Press 2016). By the 2000's the Irish Community had since dispersed and by this time, only three of the original public houses of Walmgate are left: The Spread Eagle, The 5 lions and The Red Lion (Wilson 2006, 122 & 151). The Bus Depot and Pullmans Coaches on Navigation Road remained until they were developed in 2009 for the construction of student flats (York Press 2009).

During these changes to the Foss Island and Walmgate areas, the City of York Council was created as a unitary authority in 1996 (no longer two-tier relationship with North Yorkshire County Council). At this time, as has been discussed in Tom Crewe's article (2016) there has been a continual reduction of autonomy from central government, and the cutting of services provided and lack of spending power of councils will have implications. Despite this reduction of services, the CYC has been assembling profiles for all its wards. From recent Guildhall Ward Statistics (CYC 2017m) it is evident Walmgate is remains a poorer part of York, with 20% of children living in poverty and has highlighted crime as an area of concern (particularly substance abuse).

Overall, the changes to the Walmgate and Foss Islands areas are dramatic over a relatively short space of time. Industrial and utilities landscape have developed into commercial retail space in Foss Islands, whilst dense residential areas have developed into businesses in Walmgate, excepting the council and increase of students flats on Navigation Road. Red Tower is use mainly for storage by the CYC until 2014, when was re-opened by the Friends of York Walls in the winter (Rainger 2014) and turned into an art exhibition in the summer (Heinrich & Palmer 2014). A discussion on these changes to the localities is held in Chapter Seven of the main thesis.

D.ii The Red Tower Diaries

The following section comprises of the full ethnographic ‘narrative’ of the Red Tower Project which includes all coded fieldnotes, interview extracts and visual media. A table detailing the selection process of fieldnotes, interview excerpts and visual media can be found in Appendix A.iii. All fieldnotes, interview transcripts and visual media can be also explored within the NVivo database (Appendix F). Full interview transcripts for this chapter are also located in Appendix D.iii whilst the full lists of visual media are located in Appendix D.iv.

7.1. PRELUDE: The door ajar

July 2014-April 2015—Red Tower Beginnings

Discovering the Red tower’s potential, the enthusiasm by different people and their ideas.

In July 2014, after a chat with my CDA supervisor Harry at the CYC, I met Lilac, an energetic and crinkly-smiled lady of about 50 who ran TIM (The Incredible Movement, non-profit). She was also a heritage regeneration consultant. Sitting at the window seats of a bustling bicycle café near Micklegate Bar, she talked me through her ideas of community action—inspired by the Incredible Edible group of Todmorden. She recited the TIM motto (“Fun, Fast, Cheap, Local”) and discussed her thoughts on the role of the local council in York (with mixed reviews). She said she disliked bureaucracy and paperwork but commended the recent council leader’s work in meeting people at coffee shops. I decided to keep in touch and so followed TIM on social media between June and October.

In September, I noticed a twitter post by TIM concerning a food project on the city walls:

“Calling all Yorkies! Want to get stuck into an exciting foodie project in York’s ancient walls? See @timinyork1 website for more details!”

Adapted from screen shot, September 2014.

Interested, I attended a meeting (at the Red Tower) which took place on October 16th 2014. Those present included the chairman of the Friends of York Walls, a member of the Navigation Road and Walmgate Residents Association; Harry the CYC archaeological staff, a member of the Friends of York Walls, Lilac and her colleague, Frank, an architect. Whilst inside the small, cool, and dark building, ideas were discussed concerning a future project utilising the Red Tower as a community asset. I was looking up at the rafters, feeling the potential of this small building.

I later attended a public meeting held in a local pub in Fossgate in December. Lilac acted as chairwoman. Others present included representatives from different charitable/community facing organisations such as York Food Bank, the Human Rights group at the University of York, the Council, one other member each from the Walmgate and Navigation Road Residents Association and the Friends of York Walls. This group of people explored how the Red Tower space could be used to serve the community; ideas such as a cooking, growing space, a social hub for those who were isolated and a space to hire for businesses. Several simultaneous conversations broke out over how Red Tower could be a social enterprise (selling jams and chutney with Red Tower labels), and how it could contribute to the network of revenue already established within the Walls. It was raised that a Community Asset transfer in collaboration with the City of York Council would be necessary as a way to move forward. It was noted how the local Residents Association had had difficulties with the previous the community centre (Space 109, which had shut down in 2011) and were not directly wishing to be involved. Despite this, it was also decided that the January Residents open weekend (31st) would be a good way to raise profile and generate ideas.

Ahead of the Resident Open weekend, a contingency of the group met again to discuss plans. This involved how to promote the event through use of social media. I discussed with Lilac the use of postcards as a feedback mechanism to collect feedback regarding how the building was to be used. My neighbour had a plywood-board and suggested we used this so that the postcards of suggestions could be stuck on and made visible (along with post-it notes). In addition, Mike from the council, Neighbourhoods and Equality Department, was present and mentioned that there was ward money available and encouraged those present to apply for it.

The 31st of January was success and over 635 people turned up over the two days. Lots of suggestions (approx. 160) as to the use of the building were gathered by the 'ideas board'—

keen that we needn't lose the spark of the project through planning and the creating of the infrastructure...she suggested it would be good to do small informal events.



Figure 17. Our first Residents Weekend January 2015 © Lilac

24th February Lilac and I attended a meeting with the archaeological staff, Harry, and another council practitioner in the property department regarding the steps needed to carry out a community asset transfer and any alterations to the building in order to create cafe. A permit licence will be given to the group as a temporary measure for events and a letter of support from CYC. Next step would be planning—Listed Building Consent will need to be sent to Design, Conservation and Sustainability Department team. They discussed the costing of the works (and the services). Harry offered assistance in supplying people who could carry out the works, but first needed to assess expenditure. All were very enthusiastic about the concept of 3 towers (Walmgate, Fishergate Postern and Red Tower) having more communal use on that section of Walls.

There was another on 14th April, 12 people attended to discuss ways encourage people to take on specific roles within the group. Patricia, an enthusiastic 20-something employee at a national charity, opted to be admin support and events worker (she'd heard about Red Tower through

Food not Bombs). Claire, a quiet-but highly pro active employee at the City of York Council (previously community hubs and then IT) was to look into business planning. Mr Compost, a local compost expert (50 something but still with a cheeky smile) was to help start found the Edible Garden alongside the keen and capable Linda of Edible York.

Lilac took the role of project leader, after asking if anyone else wanted to first. I took on the role of community engagement researcher and social media coordinator (with help from Mr Compost). At the time, I was discussing options to reach out to the Traveller community in nearby James St and was seeking insight from Vicky, the young and talkative lead member of Real Junk Food Project, who was interested in the space for RJFP volunteering (and had previously been engaged to a member of the traveller community). At this meeting also, I met Jenny, the Volunteering and Careers officer at YST J who showed an interest in getting some of the students as volunteers to work on the project, particularly in community engagement.

7.2 Widening the door:

Early attempts at community engagement targeting the those living in the social housing opposite. Plans forming for the rest of the future, sense of dedication.

21-04-15 Student event planning

Following the meeting on the 14th April, there was an impetus to get things moving in terms of public engagement. By 2pm Tues (21st) Lilac, Vicky and myself were standing on the grassy area outside the door of the Red Tower facing 17 students, as organised by Jenny. I'd planned a project that would involve immediate local residents in the area, literally interviewing them and asking them what they wanted to see happen at the Red Tower. However, it was deemed by Lilac, Vicky and the students, more simple to invite residents to a picnic event and to ask for feedback given the time constraint on the students (they could only do four sessions of 2hrs each Tuesday.)

After agreeing, the group of us split in two so we could have an explore of the Walmgate area (this was in fact my first time walking around it.) I went with the group led by Vicky. Walking on the outer side of the walls (next to the road) she said "Have you noticed the Red Tower isn't on the VisitYork map of York?", to which I exclaimed I hadn't (and subsequently grew thoughtful). As I was thinking, she continued to talk about the area to the gaggle of students following her; it

seemed she had a great deal of local knowledge about the area, and talked about some of the barriers between locals and students, giving instances of the social dynamic and different communities. She also had insight into the designs of the social houses (pointing “these would be that big, those a bit smaller”).

The two groups reconvened and agreed we would hand out leaflets as invitations and to collect feedback (which I would design). We’d hand them out in the area and in the students flats if possible.

Vicky’s interview (19-08-15, home of participant)

INTERVIEWER: So when you met us that time, what was your intention with the Red Tower, the connection there?

RESPONDENT: Well it was to find out more about the Red Tower, what you guys were wanting to do. And also part of York Junk Food Project, we were very keen to work with the Edible York and growing, so that is teaching people about food and educating them. And we came to visit the meeting to find out what you guys are about. I personally like the location. I know Walmgate quite well with the council estate there, and the idea was to try and work alongside each other to support each other.

‘Cause the main thing was to actually reach the community and try and get them to take on the projects as their own. And I’ve had quite an experience working with deprived areas and people in different classes to get them involved in community work.

11-05-15 Leafleting in Rosemary Place

A few days later, Lilac and I took a handful of the feedback postcards I’d developed. We were trying to engage with the people about the Red tower and the picnic event we’d planned with the students. Trying to catch people as they walked past the tower; residential people living in the houses nearby, passers-by such as tourists, local walkers and students living in the Percy’s Wharf accommodation over the road. We spent a couple of hours outside Red Tower on this warm and windy afternoon and talked to around 10-11 people. Some of those we stopped were residents, around 4, one carrying a shopping bag from Morrisons, walking home. Most showed polite interest moving towards major interest. In one case, a middle-aged lady we spoke to said she’d pass around the leaflet of the event to her neighbours. Of the few we spoke there was a

mixed response on the idea of the café—one resident saying, as she walked away from us, “It would be good for the *tourists*”. The others seemed more responsive to a culturally conscious café, in line with Vicky’s real food junk Project. Kids featured strongly twice today and the Crèche idea or teaching ideas featured 2 out of the 10.

I had to put ideas out there as examples or suggestions (i.e. café, growing space other). Other participants were more independent. One student (I think I spoke to 2 of them) said “Turn it into a dungeon!”—we both laughed. The other, turning to look at the building, said they liked the Red Tower as it was.

One of the residents (the one with 2 dogs) gave us an insight into the space around the Red Tower—not many people come out or linger. So afterwards, Lilac and I sat on the horseshoe wall, having a conversation about space and place. We both agreed this place had a calmness or quietness which Lilac referred to as being “a Dead Zone”.

12-05-15 Post Student event

The Picnic event had happened and Lilac said she was pleased that two families with children had arrived, and run around and played with balloon swords. Mr Compost, who was also a local kids entertainer, had been able to help at the event as well. Afterwards Lilac, I and Patricia sat in the Waitrose cafe across the road. We discussed how we thought the building could be used during the summer. We sat on the sofas and passed round ideas including foam swords, fake forts, a LEGO day, and a crèche. Lilac also proposed ideas about hiring out the top floor as a business training venue which could be hired out to local businesses in York. “It’s a decent interesting meeting place” as Lilac stated. We also talked about the ‘energy’ of the building. Lilac related that she has a sister who does reiki healing for buildings. According to Lilac’s sister the Red Tower has “a golden light and has a sense of wanting to be loved”.

Patricia, sitting cross legged and Lilac, leaning forward towards the table, discuss the idea of opening the Red Tower every Saturday morning, 10-1, for tea, coffee and cake. This would encourage the local residents to make use of the space and would be in line with the pay as you feel ethos which Vicky was working on elsewhere. We compiled a shopping list including coffee urns mugs tea soup (Patricia writing this down on her notepad) and several items that would be useful including arm chairs, blankets, a table, music, solar powered lights:

“I’ll research where to get these from” says Patricia, with a gleam in her eye. “But before we open for the Saturday’s, we need to clean the Red Tower a little bit. I’ve been wanting to do it for ages!” she emphasises.

Lilac’s interview (07-08-15, Bike Cafe):

[...] what’s really, really exciting about Red Tower, if it goes as I would personally like it to, it’s actually a demonstration of being able to do things really differently. It’s not about opening a café, it’s not about growing veggies in a bed outside, it’s about actually demonstrating to people that you can do this. You know, we don’t need to live the way we live. We don’t need to be clad down by true market capitalism and top-down hierarchies and the council telling us whether we can wear a blue blouse on a Wednesday. We don’t need to live like that. There is another way of living.

[...]

So my real ambition is for, you know, our energy to spill over the wall and for people to start coming out into the council bits to start to say, ‘Actually, I don’t really like prickly bushes, I’m going to plant some, I don’t know, spinach or something.’ Fine, do it. That would be my ultimate dream, I think if that happens [...]

23-05-15 Spring Clean

Sunny breezy day. Claire, Patricia, Linda, Mr Compost, Lilac and myself tidied the tower. Patricia had also brought flowering peas to plant in the raised bed which caused much excitement—Linda cheered at the sight of them. What also caused excitement was the movement of the table and the big door outside of the Red Tower: we stood inside and commented on the how much space there really was! Then the ladder had been placed upstairs so we were able to go into the attic space inside the Red Tower. My reaction on seeing this space, light pouring through little holes in the shutters, was astonishment. Patricia began describing ways in which she could furnish the upstairs interior. She talked of lighting, using solar candles etc.



Figure 18. Capturing the light through rafters on first floor of Red Tower.



Figure 19. Volunteers at work Spring Cleaning.



Figure 20. The newly planted Edible Bed



Figure 21. Brooms & Bicycles

Afterwards, Patricia took charge of 'beam-sweeping'. Outside in the sunshine Mr Compost shows how to get beans sprouts using the old wooden door as a table outside. People were coming past on their walks all the time off the walls, looking inside and looking at the interpretation signs. Lilac talked to some of the visitors and explained the project. I went back to doing some sweeping but realised there were one-to-many brooms about. I left to help Linda with the planting. Water was obtained for the plants from a nearby resident who was hanging out his washing near the flats; Lilac literally went up and asked for help.

Packing up, the door was very heavy to move back in but four of us managed to lift it back in and the table afterwards. Then as we were packing up, Jenny turned up with her other half (a carpenter). She seen on Facebook that we would be working and so she had brought her husband to help stack up the raised bed a bit more. We watched him do this. He was very fast with tools (measuring to fit the corner, sawing and then drilling).

As we left, Lilac and I discussed opening up on the 6th of June for the next activity, her adding that it had been "a very productive day".



Figure 22. The FOYW interpretation panels and Walls

Patricia's interview (08-08-15, Red Tower):

I want the upstairs to look gorgeous. I'm in love with the upstairs of the Tower. I went up there, the first time I saw it I had little goose bumps and it's just got the lovely beams and all the ledges and all the little cubby holes. I go up there and I can just see how good it can be. So my desires are to get the kitchen fitted out downstairs, so we can start focusing on the upstairs, getting that decorated and looking very vintage and lovely and warm and happy. And to have that used for the café side on Saturdays or for businesses or organisations to use that space for their activities. So games clubs, book clubs, knitting clubs, theatre clubs, open cinema clubs, businesses who want to do team meetings or team building days. Just to bring people in to use that space. Then we've got the downstairs for the catering to do the sandwiches, soups for lunches. So you can have it as a day venue as well.

Linda's interview (12-08-15, Local pub):

I'm really keen that the project does make really good use of the space. If we can do it for cooking-type, community-type stuff as well, that's brilliant. If there's enough of a drive to expand the Edible Beds around the back there, or around the front, with picnic areas or fruit trees, or whatever, then brilliant!

But there's no point putting this stuff in and then nobody looks after it and so it dies. It's growing the team and have the team look after the stuff – then that's the right time to start filling it.

7.3 The Promise of Summer

We open 12 POP up café's in all, between 10-1 (3hrs) every Saturday. Approx. £250 is made in donations over this period. A few extra friends, key connections are made and the edible garden grows. But no solid recruitment from the immediate local community, except for the interests of local kids and several furniture/crockery donations by residents. Seeking to raise further funding and profile by organising a Heritage Open Day event.



Figure 23.. Flyers and Posters on Community Boards



Figure 24. Crockery donations from local residents.



Figure 25. Viewing the cranes & student castle development on Navigation Road

25-07-15 Red Tower POP Up café

I've been at the Red Tower with the Pop-Up Café, selling tea and cakes to the public and the wallwalkers and some residents of Walmgate and Navigation Road. We've had donations of furniture, cups, crockery and books from local residents. And today, a lovely patio table from a middle-aged couple living just over the way, Isabel and Craig. She told me she was "Happy to help!", as she lifted it over the horseshoe wall. She then told me that she'd seen my flyer on her floor and suggested I put one up on the community board (which I did later).

Lilac and Linda were there and some of the guys from Food Not Bombs turned up as well. There was plenty of cake (one glistening chocolate fudge). Lilac went and got batteries sorted for the lights and some visitors started coming in almost immediately. Wallwalkers seem very keen to go upstairs, although they're a little bit apprehensive about the ladder (we notify people that it's at their own risk to climb it with a sign).

And then we had an important visitor enter. I had bumped into Cathy, a white-haired smiley Irish lady, when I was working with the students back in May one afternoon trying to distribute the leaflets. And Lilac had already spoken to her previously because she's part of the residents' association (along with resident Sally—who I'd forgotten had been at the very first meeting!) A chat with Mike yesterday seems to suggest that actually there is stuff going on with the RA, what with the AGM happening in September. But as Cathy tells me, the residents' association status is ambiguous. According to Cathy, her and Sally are the only two remaining managing the residents' association and Cathy didn't want to be Treasurer.

With the kids running around and some of the people coming past, it felt like a really good busy atmosphere. After Cathy had gone, Sally, with grey-striking hair, turned up. In her dominant jordie accent she gave me a lot of information about the general area. She tells me, she's been here since the 1980s, "I used to work in developments and also a bakery on Gillygate". She also spoke to some of the kids about their parents. The kids made some drawings and we put them up on the sign.

Sally, myself and the kids went outside to chat. An elderly lady from the residential flats came over, stood the other side of the wall and started to talk angrily. She complained about the kids not treating the area very nicely, said they were stamping in the edible bed and throwing stuff at

the building etc. She was shaking her walking stick at them. Eventually, after she'd said her bit, she went back to her flat.

After a brief consultation on this (it was known this lady, Martha, had had difficulties with the local kids), Sally, Lilac and I talked about the use of the space in Rosemary Place and the difficulties the RA had met with and things that she'd wanted (not getting the right planters in the space). "And that's really important for the Red Tower" I said. "Because if we're going to change space in this area here, then we need to know what the other area's aspirations are and act in line."

Cathy interview (10-08-15, Waitrose Café)

INTERVIEWER: ...yeah, when the project leader, Lilac, came to the residents' association, what did...

RESPONDENT: She wasn't welcomed really. I think Sally had invited her and I don't know if Sally had an officer's job then. But this [other] woman was very negative about it. I think she's worked in housing associations or local Government but when Lilac left, I felt uncomfortable. And I said, 'Well I'll volunteer but I don't know that I have any particular skills that will help. But I could be a foot soldier.'

Well of course when she left, they all homed in on me. They'll never get off the ground, they'll never be allowed to put plumbing in there. They'll never be allowed to put electricity in there and I just came away, I thought, 'I don't know what this is all about.' And I just volunteered because it's in the area of where I live and I'm interested in the area where I live.

Sally interview (10-08-15, Waitrose Café)

Well, I'm not one for nostalgia, but I do think heritage is important, without being nostalgic. If there's a building there, rather than making a museum out of that, I'd rather see it used. When I saw inside of it, I thought, 'My God, there's a lot more to do here than I thought.' [...] It's a job and a half, to say the least. It's something I couldn't devote my energies to. If somebody got it up and running, I would support them. I would look to be able to use it if it was up and running.

We used to have a regular knitting group in Space 109, we met every week. I don't want to go to, I want it for local residents, I don't want to have to go out and teach knitting

skills. I wanted to get local residents in for a cuppa, chat to eat other about personal things or a way of somebody coming along and maybe giving us a word about one or two neighbours that I could maybe just go and report to the council for them if they were feeling uneasy about it. So connected with the Residents' Association, but apart from it, if you know what I mean. Which could be done, I suppose, in the Red Tower, but I've asked a few people about the Red Tower and they've said, 'Oh, that's a good idea.' I'm saying then, or other people have just...and then thought nothing else of it after that. Or they've thought, 'Well that's a waste of time, isn't it? And, 'Well, I'm not bothered.' So they seem to be not bothered. Apathetic.

Claire's interview (06-08-15, West Offices)

It would be a really valued service if it was a building that they could come and use and have a coffee or let the kids run around in the garden or something like that. But I can't see any people from the area becoming part of the core group, really.

[...]

When I attempted to do a top-up of my degree, I was going to do what motivated people to volunteer for beer festivals, 'cause I used to be heavily involved in York CAMRA and the beer festival. And I always remember a phrase which was, 'Forget altruism. I just want a T-shirt,' sort of thing. And I looked at all the different things people have volunteered for, like the Winter Olympics and various other things. People want something from the experience of volunteering and giving their time. And I think that has to be looked very carefully at.



Figure 26. Claire digging a hole for a dogwood shrub.



Figure 27 The growth of the Red Tower Edible Bed

30-07-15 Brigantes Tash & HOD meeting

After several pop up cafes, the core group (now myself, Lilac, Patricia and Claire) decide we want to run for Heritage Open Day event in September. We hold a meeting in a pub with other interested individuals and Lilac invites her Restoration Project colleagues. Tash is highly successful business partner of Lilac's who now works as a freelance interpreter of heritage sites and has agreed to chat with me. We meet at Brigantes pub with Lilac and the rest of the Red Tower team, but have our own separate conversation for about 70 minutes.

When we've sat in the corner away from the others, I give an introduction about the PhD, my involvement with RT and she gives hers. She said she would like to 'download' her professional opinion onto me. I was all ears.

Tash starts that every project needs to start with a strategy, an "interpretative planning framework". This brings together an understanding of the building's

- Assets
- Significance
- Resources

- audiences
- and where you want to go with it all

Tash explains that having these will enable you to plan a direction of travel, so that everything one does is part of a process and you can progress with an ultimate aim and objective in mind. For example, York City Council will have these aims; to encourage more touristic diversity, to encourage explorations into the nooks and crannies of the city in order to relieve crowds from the city. This is essentially their strategic context, their strategic priorities. If, with RT project, you can align yourself with York's strategic priorities, hand in hand, they will start to see the benefits that you can give them. She mentions Harry as being a key person to talk to about the strategic priorities for the city.

She mentions her visit to the RT and how she met some of the kids that had been running around there, who had been climbing in and out of the RT. So the RT is hitting nice audiences and not even trying.

I say I've been thinking in terms of logos. Tash responds by bringing up the subject of branding and says that I might benefit from talking to a firm called Bivouac who deal with website work and design.

Back to the RT plan, and she suggests that this course of action would be best:

1. write a interpretation plan—including a conservation statement
2. start a small HLF funding bid (she or others can help with this)
3. Understand and engage with audience and consultation
4. Potentiality for me being involved in the delivery
5. Both digital and low tech materials
6. And the proposing of events

At this point, two parts of my brain are fighting (I want to do this...but can I do it as a researcher?? Is it too tricky?)

I go over the elements of my research with Tash. I mention the theoretical link I am investigating between heritage values, action and local-ness. Tash states her interest in the aspect of value but she says, I need to watch out for over academic language: my conceptual ideas are good but that the interpretation planning guidelines can help provide the right steps towards creativity, to harness the creative ideas.

After finishing the chat with Tash I moved to the rest of the table's discussion.

After seeing how the kids are interacting with the Red Tower, Lilac and Tash are keen to cater the approach to the HOD for the kids. Mr Compost wants to do some balloon activities again and he puts forward the idea of an "under-sixteen council". Lilac makes reference to my recommendation that there should be more hands-on activities (like egg-box painting). Lilac says that in a bid we could use some of the photos of kids. Mr Compost and I discuss that we need to have to get consent (even if just verbal) from parents (Patricia agrees here).

The meeting ends and informal chatting breaks out. I move seats to speak to Lilac about my idea for the cinema on HOD; "How are we going to fit lots of people inside?", I ask.

"By simply using what we have already seat-wise (so fitting in about 8 people?)", she suggests.

So I come to the realisation that the HOD cinema event is perceived by her as a smallish part of other activities (and consequently I agree that this will be more suitable if there are other things happening). I can still do the cinema for other events. I turn to the Locality workshop that we had attended on 29th (again organised by email) [she'd done the morning; I'd attended the afternoon]. Keeping in line with 'saying the unsaid' I conveyed to Lilac that I felt like I had not put in as much as I could have done so far with the community stuff; "it is just figuring out the practicalities of reaching out!" Lilac stated that often this is the case with such projects she has said before in an email that projects like this can feel sometimes like pushing water uphill. She also added that, "The way we've done this is in line with the TIM style of working through things—kind of haphazard but more open and social facing. Some people don't like this. Normally in such projects a constitution is set up, and funding is acquired—this is dreary".

I say, "I'm still with the TIM style of doing things but that I think more stable a plan is needed if going to succeed." Lilac agrees this a good idea and adds, "If we don't succeed then at least we have had some nice cake-eating activity and some fun".

08-08-15 Red Tower pop up café

Today at the pop up café, Jonathan—a retiree, member of the York Past and Present Facebook Group, and the secretary of the Unison Retired Members Club where I'd given a talk—and his wife came into the Red Tower to hand me the DVD of Fifty Years of York. We decided there and then could be played at the Heritage Open Day.

We chatted inside the building as wallwalkers came in and out. His wife had been born in Walmgate and had a famous uncle, who was also part of this community in Walmgate at the time it was part of the Irish sector of the city.

And we spoke of the generator, which could help put proper light in the building. “Yeah I can lend you a good'un. Will do, can do”, says Jonathan. And then he went and looked upstairs. Purple-haired Heather, a storytelling lady from Arts Barge, showed up and she wanted to offer her services as part of the Heritage Open Day. And I sort of ended up assuming a sort of pseudo-organisational role and told her that it would be really helpful if she could bring her thread tent, as she described it, and do some storytelling with the kids. She said was very up for that, “Really like this project and what you're doing”. I said that maybe we need to have a meet together about the Heritage Open Day, to which Claire also agreed. Then Cathy popped in again, and I organised meeting her for an interview at one o'clock instead of two o'clock.

Patricia, Claire and I stayed outside in the sunshine for a bit, chatting, watching people go past. Vicky, from Real Junk Food, turned up. She sat down with us. She told us how her things had gone with her project which hadn't been successful for political reasons. And we sat around her giving her some time to talk through, as she told us she was disappointed. In the meantime there were kids running around, there were tourists and people milling in and out of the building as per usual, having a look. Once again, I didn't manage to keep a track on them. Anyway, anything else? We made £13. Not bad.

Wallwalkers' interview, group of young and older English women and one Jewish man roughly mid twenties (15-08-15, Red Tower)

INTERVIEWER: First can I ask you what you're doing in York? You said you're locals?

RESPONDENT 1: We are. We're going shopping. [laughing] I'm sorry, but we are.

INTERVIEWER: That's okay.

RESPONDENT 1: Walk the dog.

RESPONDENT 2: We thought we'd come the scenic route into where we wanted to go.

INTERVIEWER: The scenic route of where you wanted to go. [...] What part have you done of the walls, then?

RESPONDENT 2: From start of– We walked along the river to Walmgate Bar, at that end, and then walked all the way along The Wall from there.

INTERVIEWER: Okay, and...

RESPONDENT 2: We haven't had to go near a road yet.

INTERVIEWER: Was that part of the...

RESPONDENT 2: Yes, off-road.

RESPONDENT 1: ...part of the appeal? Yeah, we like wandering. If we can, it's nice to go on The Walls as opposed to get away from the traffic.

INTERVIEWER: Yeah, okay. That's brilliant. So you're going shopping and anything else that you'll do today that is part of your...

RESPONDENT 2: No, it was me mostly. I wanted to go to a particular shop in Gillygate and we decided that we'd go this way around. So we have to go through the middle of town which really busy. We haven't been on the walls for a while so we thought it would be a nice thing to do.

[...]

RESPONDENT 2: I've walked past [Red Tower] so many times and driven past it so many times, and to be able to come down here and it's open, it's just amazing, just lovely. And you can walk into it without paying.

RESPONDENT 4: Yes [...] it's a building that's there and not used. There's a lot of potential.

INTERVIEWER: Potential, yeah. What is the potential, do you think?

RESPONDENT 4: That's tricky.

RESPONDENT 2: I like the idea that you suggested of it being, remaining open and communal. Because even just like today, people have come in and just had a chat but you wouldn't maybe, usually stop and have a chat, would you?

RESPONDENT 4: [unclear – 0:11:06] community space speaking to other people.

RESPONDENT 1: I think people probably who are a, well a bit local probably see it, love it [unclear – 0:11:16] but it's almost like part of the furniture. There's so many places, you're like, 'Oh that's lovely,' and then you just walk past. But we came in today because obviously it draws you in and I think it would be really nice to have somewhere that does that. And it links you to the city and it's quite, yeah, it's lovely.

RESPONDENT 2: Because I'll go back to work on Monday and say, 'Oh you know that old tower off Foss Islands? It's open.' Because I mean people who've lived here for– We've only lived here for twenty years.

RESPONDENT 1: Only! Only the rest of our lives!

RESPONDENT 2: We're not proper locals...

RESPONDENT 1: ...yeah, we are...

RESPONDENT 2: ...who would remember that from when they were– Their grannies and things and they'll probably remember when it was used for other things.

22-08-15 Red Tower Pop up café

It was quiet at first. Lilac had been telling me we'd got help from the officer at The Conservation Volunteers, Ed, who'd delivered more soil for the edible garden. I then cycled to get some hot water from my house, using Lilac's bag to transport the tea urn (heavy). When I got back, Libby, a new, elderly but vibrant volunteer interested in managing the Edible Garden, was talking to Martha (the elderly resident who'd disliked the kids) over the horseshoe wall. Libby ushered me over to speak to her. Libby handed me Martha's details, saying, "She'd be a good person to interview!" Martha and I chatted and she then came over the walls, had a cup of tea, and sat on a deck chair in the sunshine.

Then Jonathan turned up with a generator. I introduced him to Lilac, they got to chatting and she asked him if he could potentially fitting a handrail on the ladder which was a health risk. “No problem, happy to help!”, he answered, adjusting his faded-red cap.

Ian (an young bearded artist, similar age to me) turned up having been in contact via Facebook. He had originally approached Lilac asking if we needed some hand with designs leaflet designs. We sat on the wall, watching the wallwalkers come past. I gave him my research leaflets and showed him my ideas (see photo) that I thought could be useful for the HOD leaflet. We decided that I would send over all the material that I had which at the time included some text a photo of the Heather, storyteller, a picture of the cinema film that we were going to show and some information about the Red Tower in general. Then we’d re-convene and talk over the design later in the week.

Then me and Jonathan had a really good chat. There was a lot going on, it's quite hard to keep track but essentially Jonathan said “I’ll come by next week, come in and try and do a demonstration of how the cinema could be put up, put the handrail up and potentially dismantle the table”.

Lilac and Claire later dubbed him a ‘knight in shining armour’ on Facebook.



Figure 28. Clearing the tower in advance of the Heritage Open Day



Figure 29. Lilac and Jonathan discussing plans for the Heritage Open Day



Figure 30. Red Tower Hand Rail © Jonathan.

Martha's interview (29-08-15, home of participant)

Well we had Space 109 and if that opened again it would be the key to keeping the kids from being in trouble all the time, causing mischief and firing water at the tourists on the walls and riding their push bikes, scooters that they have, because they go along there and the people are crossing the wall and they haven't got room and the kids are stopping them from going along the city walls. Well it's not a good impression. When they come to visit York, they've come to see its history and its environment, but people think that these flats are like prison blocks, because they don't look much different. Because we're in a conservation area here, where we are.



Figure 31. Martha often came for a cup of tea if she saw the Red Tower open.

Ed's interview (13-08-15, office of participant)

Ed: Yeah, we walked past and they both had a look at your flowerbed... Actually, 'cause I did that [...] I showed them the difference between what I said about putting in an infrastructure and having no one behind it and how it's problematic. Five minutes later we were looking at your site and looking at how there are people there and how much better it is. You know, the amount of money as an organisation we've spent in the Tang Hall to do an orchard site, which we're having real difficulties with – things getting vandalised and community engagement with it – compared to have the people there first and it's just so much better. It's chalk and cheese, it really is.

Kat: But that's really interesting 'cause some of the difficulties that we're facing with the Red Tower is the community engagement side of things.

Ed: Yeah.

Kat: And we've discussed this at different points but there is a core group of...

you got best before on here?' But then there is also the other side of working as a community and networking.

Lilac: Yes, the latter is what we're about, really.

Vicky: Then for like, well for me it's communicating, I use food as a form to communicate with others.

Lilac: Of course, yes.

Vicky: And training and educating people and then for like the heritage side, for me, is the cherry on top.

Lilac: Yeah, that's how I always used to look at it.

7.4 Retiring for the winter?

Funding bids not successful, HOD went ok (but had rained with only a small amount of visitors, over 100). Summer was coming to an end, volunteers stepping back, Edible Bed starting to fade...and then 'out of the blue', a link is created with Locality and the COMA funding.

02-09-15 El Piano meeting

We have this meeting organised via emails. As we sit down at the table at El Piano we go around and give our views on the future of the red Tower. Lilac would like to step back as she is going travelling for the next 6 months. Patricia also feels she cannot put in as much time over the winter because she is "considering taking on extra studies alongside another full time job in nursing". Claire is feeling like she wants to be involved but she doesn't want to drive the project. She says, "I want to see something happen, but can only do or commit to one event a month".

Lilac says "I would like to see that people use the Red Tower to run their own events we are essentially advertising the Red Tower as a venue to hire. We need to have a cry for help for volunteers including from students and potentially Kat could help with that?". So beyond the heritage open days then we propose to have 1 event per month for example Halloween for the kids half term. Patricia thinks about putting on a compost bin. I propose putting "the bed to bed" event in November December.

Lilac says “we are volunteers we can't be expected to put on a show! We will give hand for dressing up the building and it's like a camping site we need to sell it basically as it is as a basic provision of space”. I mention that I am concerned we need to make it more homely to invite people to come along (Patricia agrees, nodding.) Lilac says we “got most of the ingredients there already including the rugs coffee and light. We could call out for a donation in order to get some of these extra comfort things like cushions on a table”.

Me: “What about the heating?”

Lilac: “They can get their own sources of heat hired out”.

Patricia: “I can make ponchos!” and grins.

Lilac: “This is very TIM thinking!”

Claire: “That'd be a good textile projects for the students...”.

Lilac sums up: “I am not going to fight going with it. These things will happen. It's all about the Red Tower as a building. It's about the space and upstairs is the nugget and the magnet that draws people in”.

September: Lead up to the Red Tower Heritage Adviser role

I had taken fieldnotes of my Red Tower activities (April-September). During September, which was also my TAP month, I worked on chapter writing and social media reporting, and conferencing. I aimed to engage with local residents further over the winter, maybe seeing if they wanted to apply for Guildhall Ward funding. This was my position as Lilac Claire and Patricia were standing back from the project.

On the 27th September, Lilac forwarded an email to the Red Tower from a council practitioner connected to asset management. It was regarding an opportunity for fast-track funding from a programme called COMA (Community Ownership of Multiple Assets), which needed to be spent by end of March 2016. Work would go towards a feasibility project (including a business plan etc.) that would inform the process of Community Asset Transfer from the Council to TIM. A decision was taken to explore the opportunity. A meeting was set up between the CYC asset manager and Lilac. This went positively.

And then, from reading Claire's email on the 5th, stating her concern about who could take on the work, I realised I could offer to go part-time for 5 months and take on a role as part of the feasibility work. I spoke to my departmental supervisor first, then Harry, and then discuss with the Red Tower group. Both supervisors were positive. A third meeting with Lilac (and cursory bumping into Claire during a CYC fire drill) indicated that the Red Tower core team were supportive (I literally got a thumbs-up and a smile from Claire).

On the 7th I had meeting with Lilac in CYC offices to discuss my idea further. We discussed fees etc. Lilac and Claire then attended (immediately afterwards) a meeting with members of the CYC, including Harry, and Locality. As I heard from Lilac afterwards, they talked of the importance of the heritage of tower within the city and agreed they would work on an application together.

On the 14th October I attended a meeting at Claire's house, in the living room, with other members of the Red Tower network to discuss our ideas on the going forward of this feasibility project (i.e. what would happen if we got the funding). The group accepted my proposed role and also that I'd have to step back from the project after March.

After this meeting, we received a number of emails from Lilac keeping us informed of the application process. We were invited to make comment on the application process. I also discussed with Lilac on the phone regarding the details of my role. I was intrigued to hear her talk of the importance of the Red Tower as a heritage asset, bringing this to the forefront; the emphasis had changed.

On the 26th October the COMA bid went in. On the 17th November, we found out that the bid had been successful from an email from Lilac.

7.5 All hands to the pump

After the reckoning in September, move into the fray of the Christmas event and the revving up of the feasibility project, including my design of feedback forms to help with consultation.

Promise of further connections (with more residents). This is followed by the aftermath of the Boxing Day Floods: the ability for Red Tower to help the proximate community through flood

relief. The CYC porta cabin is stationed in the residential area. Feedback form delivery to flats and consultation results. 2nd January open Residents weekend.



Figure 33. Early openings and fundraising /public awareness © Tash.

12-12-15 Red Tower Christmas Event

It was raining heavily. Jonathan picked me up at 9:30 from my house and picked up the fire pit that Linda (Edible York) had dropped off. We were both in good spirits and joked about having a party to ourselves because of the impending forecast and the lack of the usual members of the team. He had brought his generator and some other equipment to light and run electricity in the tower.

We set up... moved furniture, sorted tables, swept floor etc. Jonathan made the fire pit work and put his fisherman's umbrella over it (we both kept an eye on it but it worked fine...the rain was steaming off the top, smoke billowing then eventually calming down). Jonathan then worked diligently on organising the generator. Finally, the lights went on. We put twinkly lights everywhere we could reach. Then Libby turned up with cakes and hot apple juice. Mr Compost turned up and we worked on the risk assessment together, sitting on the futon, using hushed tones while Jonathan moved about. We then called together a group meeting to discuss verbally the risk assessment.

Edible York volunteers turn up with the apples. I sorted them out a table in the corner and supplied plates. Libby started offering hot apple juice to everyone and told them to savour the smell. Heather turned up with a friend and had brought a box and cushions to set up a story telling workshop on the first floor.

The rain pouring outside brought some walkers in, they filled the Red Tower space and bought lots of the cakes and tea. I asked a couple of them to answer some of my feedback forms and gave them my informed consent sheets.

One tall gentleman in a waterproof jacket turned up called Peter. He was the chairman of Edible York, and had agreed with project leader Lilac that he would work on a landscape plan as part of the feasibility project. He also filled in my feedback form.

Another gentlemen, from York Past and Present, said that ideas were coming to his head regarding the use of the Red Tower as he stood there thinking in the space. He also said he would write to me in an email some of his more elaborate ideas. I gave him my info sheet before he left.

I spoke to another man from another community archaeological organisation (battle of Stamford Bridge) who was interested in the space. He filled in my feedback sheet but we agreed that we would speak again in January. All the while I am being asked to make tea, other people are talking to me and being friendly saying hello (running around quite a bit!)

Cathy came from across the road and helped do some washing up. She brought back a bowl of our cups that had been cleaned at her house. And it was still raining. So much rain, it was flooding round the side of the Red Tower.

People started to ebb away after 1:15 but a local lady, in her late 30s with bushy brown hair, lived opposite, came in and had a look upstairs with me. She used the torch to look around, saying she could see it being useful. I explained that we wanted to know more about how the building could be used for by the community. She filled out the feedback form with me and I later found out her name was Jess. She was a therapist but off work for health issues.

Some of the volunteers started to pack up around 1:45. Another local lady turned up with two dogs. At first she left them outside in the rain, but I said she could bring them in, as it wasn't busy and the cakes had almost all gone. She said she had used the green bed over the summer, picked a courgette and made a stir fry. She said it had made her happy to think it was homegrown.

When she left and the other volunteers had packed up (giving me some apples and juice), Jonathan and I packed everything up. I counted the money we had made £30.18 (in 3hrs). I couldn't count visitors again, once again in the thick of things. We need a dedicated counter!



Figure 35. Mr Compost and Cathy chat during the Christmas Event.



Figure 34. Site Visit by the experts as part of the feasibility project

Frank's interview (15-01-16, Office of participant)

So typically in a sketch scheme or feasibility study, the type of information, type of drawn information will be relatively informal or sketchy, and that suits the stage of the project. And it might not go any further than that. Sufficient type of information to provide the basis of the scheme, for people to comprehend, say, the amount, the scale and character of that.

And typically, like this and lots of schemes, I would tend to...if people say, 'What's it going to look like?' is a very similar question at early stages as to, 'How much is it going to cost?' But I come from the, 'What's it going to look like?' So I would typically take some photographs and then take the photograph and sketch over it and put a proposal on top of that photo. It's a relatively easy and quick method.

As I say, it's sketchy but it's really to give a flavour or an idea, and also to get people interested, get them enthused. And, you know, to show the potential of any particular site or project.



Figure 36. Frank shows me the initial sketches of the Red Tower.

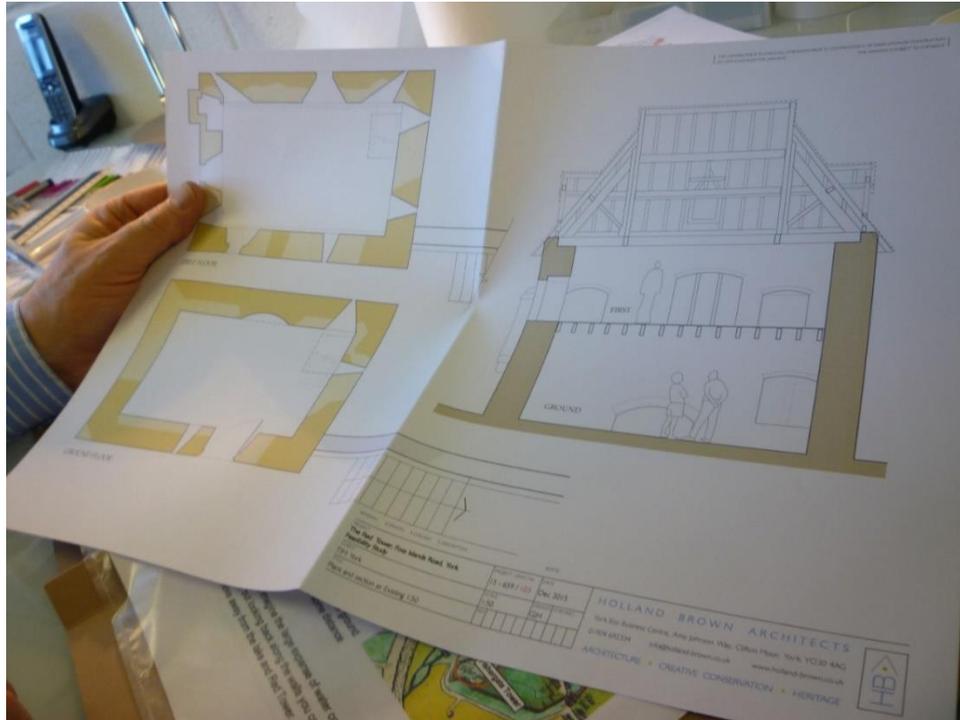


Figure 37. Frank shows me the next phase of architectural drawings.



Figure 38 Flooded Red Tower Dec 2015 © Jonathan.



Figure 39 Floods 2015. © Jonathan.

04-01-2016 Flood Relief Organising & FEASIBILITY WORK

(Written the following after the Boxing Day floods which occurred in York, 26th December 2015.)

I'm not in York but still wanting to help.

What can we offer? As Linda mentioned on the Red Tower project FB page, we don't have much other than shelter. My thoughts are that we need to, at this point, link with those doing what in the area. Claire's suggestion (to act as *the* donation point) is therefore somewhat obsolete. We don't have much time either. We cannot open everyday. Also Linda's point that we are not connected to 'offline' people is a major drawback. We have some people willing to do some leafleting (Libby, Linda, Mr Compost, and Jonathan)....but this will need to be organised. We could also keep the community board updated?

Media management

The Red Tower also needs a solid social media management plan in order to promote the cause of the Red Tower (which is my job too). I may not be able to throw all of my energy to this and I have the option of organising students to be involved in this process (as per Jenny). It is clear to me and others that a twitter and a maybe wordpress account is needed.

Twitter making—Following the steps:

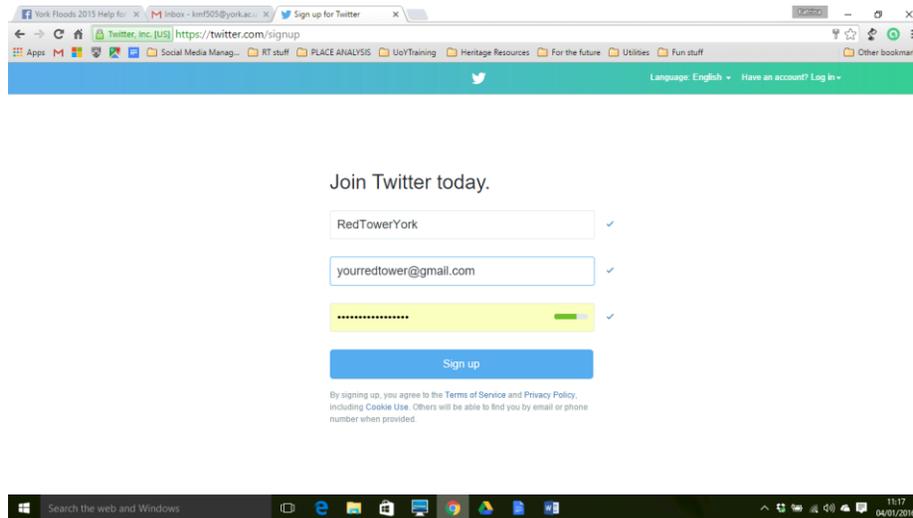


Figure 40. 1. Set up Screen shot

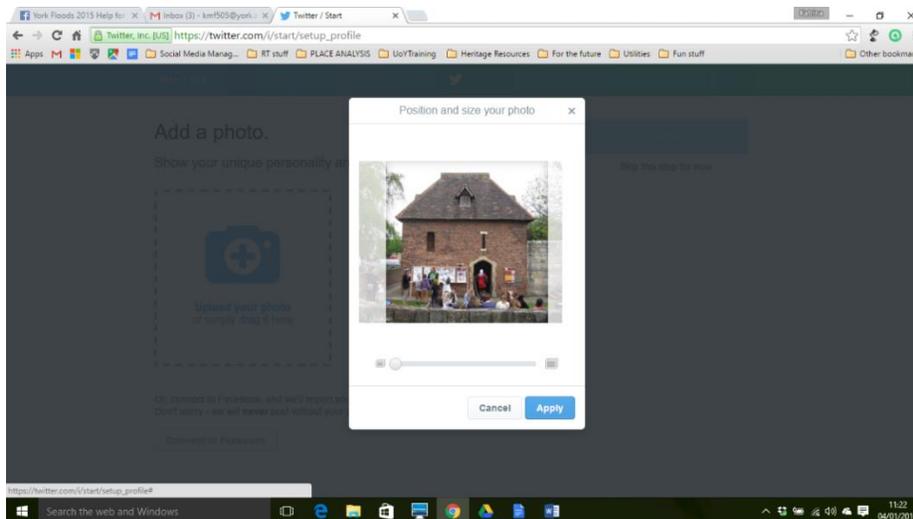


Figure 41. Choosing a Photo

What photo?...hmmm

It should really follow the Facebook pages...

Looking through my folders as see the logo of the TIMin York and Red Tower...makes me think I need to potentially change whatever I put here today in the future (in light of an actual design, logo, *BRAND*).

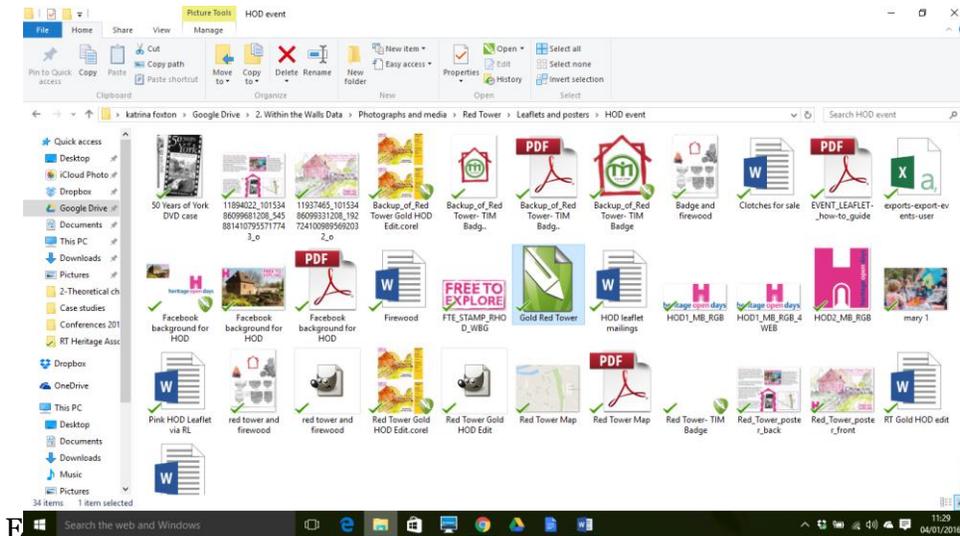


Figure 42. Design issues 1

I like the gold one. It is eye-catching.

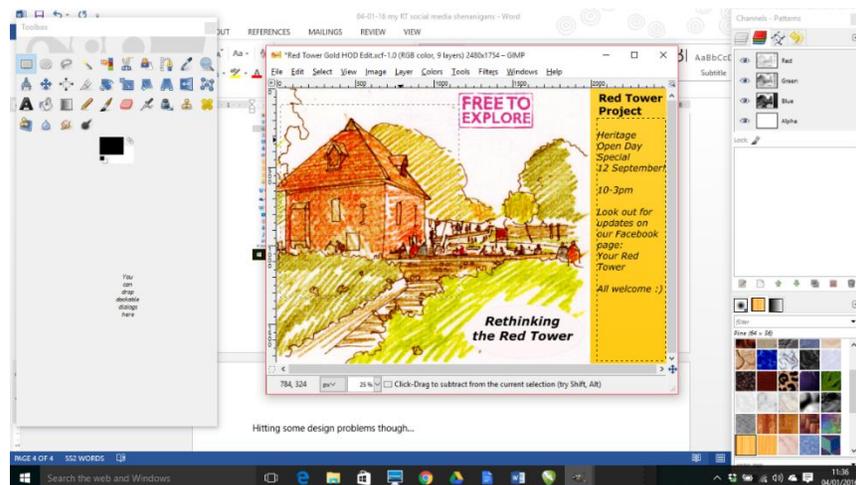


Figure 43. Design issues 2

Hitting some design problems though... (How do I paste the Red Tower on its own!!?)

Oh I did it via the layers, and then opened and saved into CorelDraw, then to PDF...then to JPEG. Time consuming. Ergh.

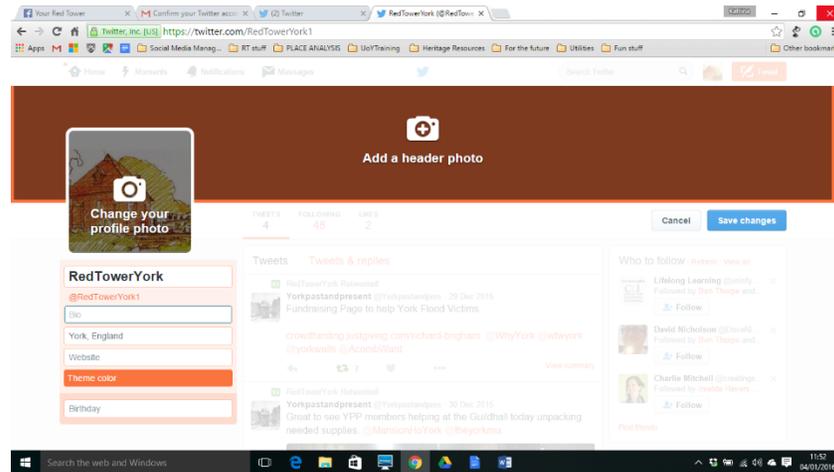


Figure 44 Almost done.

Uploaded it. Following people now on twitter and connected to the yourredtower.email account (which also has the same image now). Going to leave 'bio' blank for now as not sure we've got the 'mission statement' up and running yet. Need to choose header photo....something green?



Figure 45. Finished for now

OK. Edible bed doing its job. Here's an introductory tweet:

“RT: Say hello to the new twitter account for the Red Tower on Walmgate :)”

Now to connect to Facebook. Do I need to change the Facebook pages so they are the same?
Hmm. Deal with that later.

Speaking to Lilac

Me-- "How did your drop in go at Red Tower? Can we be of any use given our own shortcomings? Want to get in touch with St Denys really (did they come today? Any other groups?)"

Lilac--"People did turn up! and did want to chat"

Me: "Can we organise a public meeting?"

Lilac: "Stay within the brief? Don't get swept away, see if you can get involved in a public meeting (but not organise it all!) Need to attend the public meeting with local councillors. Get emails and contact them individually."

Afterthoughts

There is a need to have a flooding meeting locally. But after talking to Lilac, she doesn't want me to get swept away by this, but think I do need to get involved. Need to show a presence

16-01-16 Red Tower Flood relief move

I'd contacted Kayleigh, a PA from Bishopthorpe, whose office on Walmgate had been flooded. She was now working voluntarily as a 'flood activist', amassing volunteers, collecting cleaning supplies and donating them to those in York that needed them. She'd asked for storage on Facebook, Linda had suggested Red Tower and I'd followed up. We arranged the move of supplies to Red Tower that week.

The members of Kayleigh's group started arriving, parking next to the curb by the horseshoe wall. Mix of men and woman (about 7 of them, all over 30). Some started putting boxes on the

horseshoe wall whilst two of us brought the bags of stuff inside.

Then just more and more stuff, slowly piling up in the Tower. Wallwalkers getting in the way whilst popping their heads in was a bit problematic. A 40-something resident (Doug, who lived opposite, with tattooed skinny arms and always smoking) started helping out. He took a few things for his flat. He was constantly chatting in his gruff Yorkie accent about the flood-talk at the Barbican the day before... “Really bad news, they don't know what scuffed up the flood barriers. The gents I was talking to, well not impressed”. I gave Doug a cup of coffee (with lots of sugar, as requested).

I spoke to Kayleigh about the space downstairs in terms of open resident weekend. Basically needed space to move stuff out by the end of January. The gang (at least three of them, all at once) advised me do not serve food inside the Red Tower as it would need to be thoroughly decontaminated with disinfectants beforehand.

03-02-16 Rosemary Place post floods

So walking to the Red tower in glorious wintry sunshine but not too cold. 5mins late, I meet Gabbi—the South African Morrisons Community Champion, who I'd arranged to meet as part of my feasibility work reaching out to local businesses—by the tower. She's reading the sign. Looking up and seeing me, she immediately says “it's a lovely building”, crinkles in her eyes, and then continues looking up. I mention the fake garderobe, she says “I've read the sign round the front” gesturing. “Shall we?” I say. (Notice the extra CYC flood cabin in Rosemary Place and a van with a floor contractors name on it. Workman in high vis jackets in the corner over there, what are they doing?)

I unlock the padlock, noticing immediately to my right coming off the walls, a Dad and a minor. I offer to let them in, they both move in with Gabbi. Minor at first goes ooo but then loses interest, otherwise engaged, but the Dad seems really interested: “I've lived in York for 20 years and never seen it, never seen it open”. I talk to him about the project, and he says that the Press should really like this project. “I've got a friend who's always looking for contacts—for good news stories!”

“We have done some press releases already”—but I feel like we should have got another message out. Vague, gut feeling of dissatisfaction. Gabbi interacting with the minor who is not interested

in the grown up talk—she points out the gecko! I give dad the feedback form and my info sheet with contact details. I hope he gets in touch. He leaves with the impatient minor, his parting comment: “I like what you’re doing”.

I tell Gabbi that this always happens, “Open the door and somebody walks in!” I suggest we go upstairs—give instructions, let her go first. She says “more steady than I thought” (Jonathan will like that). Upstairs, she’s looking about...starts taking photos with her ipad, makes some comment about the light.

Says she’s impressed, “Space is quaint but cosy”.

“Our selling point”, I say.

“Weather tight?”

“Yes”, I say, “completely—the Victorian’s knew how to build a roof!”

“Space for storage?”...I show her, the areas connected to the walls outside underneath.

As I go outside again in the sunshine, my mind becomes preoccupied with the fact that I will finally be door knocking in Rosemary Place later today. I am remembering the fact that Libby said there is a real divide between lease holders and renters. With Gabbi here talking about the use of the buildings, talking about the use of the space, (she’s using her hands to move through space inquisitively—“where’s the toilet going be? Under the stairs, Tables?”—she gestures, “café spilling outside?”) I get to thinking about the way that making it ‘nice’ will impact the area.

Man alive. What if this makes the rent go up? This goes back to the gentrification thing. This is the spatial, Marxist politics that being hurled to the forefront. Have I been blinkered by a wish to make something happen here at the expense of others opportunity to afford to live here?

Thinking about the overall surroundings, HISCOX building round the back and the students accommodation too.

Well, I voice my fears to Gabbi—“what if it makes the rent go up?” She stops moving and looks. “Well, it might not impact as much as that” she ponders...”you don’t get too much footfall this side of the walls?” I guess not, wanting to be comforted. And she says, calmly, “it might not have that much impact”.

Cycling to a cafe, still very concerned with these politics which have not been tackled.

And I still have the stuff I have to do as part of this contract....

Indeed, I just got an email from a Press reporter that the Dad mentioned this morning! That was quick! Plus I'd like to call at least three schools this morning. Here we go.

Just thinking back to the rent issue...If it helped the community come together...?

Later I met with Peter of Edible York at Walmgate café. He likes to look around the café first commenting on the design. We sit and eat and chat. He says there is stuff that he thinks he can do NOW for the community of Navigation Road—"I have £240 for the area that I'd like to consult residents with, with your help?", he asks.

He'd like to make use of my feedback form, and using the blunt end of a fork to point to the map, to show the areas where he'd like to plan things to go on. I voice my issue with trying to get more people involved—I'm really concerned about the Residents opinions. He says it's hard to get access, what with the doors locked. And his impression is to go easy on the public relations side of things, to be patient with things.

We decide to do a double act in consulting residents about the Red Tower and potential spend of £240 from Edible York. He mentions "There is a division between space at RT and the estate side". His suggests that a public meeting could involve the planting of the trees and bring the two together.

Then we decide to leave the café (to measure the Red Tower area outside and then try to talk to some residents). He says it'll be good if we have even just a couple of chats!

We walk to the RT, chatting about Edible York plans. Then I spot a lady, Pat, I know through last summer, often see her walking the dog. Her kids came to play in the tower a lot (the ones Martha was so annoyed with). I suggest we go over and speak to her. Peter starts by chatting her over the horseshoe wall. But I walk all the way back down the path, cross over (it takes time and is a pain, don't want to rush!) Her dog is pulling and she is struggling, so I suggest maybe we talk another time, but we end up talking about stuff anyway. Red Tower comes up first and the dog is pushing and pulling. We talk about the kids: She says "they loved it. They used to get up in the morning and say, quick gotta get down to the tower!"

So I ask her if I can give her a feedback form to help fill in with kids. She said she'd get some of them together and ask what they think. But it would be good to hear from the parents what the kids think. She thinks art classes will be good.

Peter starts to talk about the trees—talks of planting a cooking apple tree in specific places (with the lil pot of funding he's got)—she objects frankly to having the tree outside her window (light issues) (dog still pulling, sniffing, clambering up legs at turns.)

She likes the idea of plums, because basically easy to grow and to cook with. Peter continuing—I realise his putting ideas on the table for me is confusing as I have my own agenda—this double act stuff is hard!

And then I spot Sally. We eventually say goodbye to the first lady with the dog (I can contact by facebook, but later my two messages to her get no response).

We head for Sally by the bushes, she is speaking to another resident, a small elderly lady with a walking frame. They are talking, funnily enough, about *Edible York!* I try interject, “This is the chairman of...”, but Sally says (not hearing) “Wait a minute, Kat” and keeps explaining to the other lady about Edible York is doing to the area, while we stand by waiting. Eventually they finish their conversation. The elderly lady moves off slowly with her frame (“Too cold for her to stay out long” as Sally says). Peter is there waiting patiently; I introduce them and they immediately start chatting. Once Sally realised who he is, she's really keen looking up at Peter as he talks.

He's gesturing fruit trees or planters that they can do in the area. She's explaining what she knows and who she's been talking to with regards to the area. She walks us over to the big plot of tarmac (it's the size of a mini netball pitch) and the big soil plots recently debunked by the workmen (so that's what they'd been doing!) Sally says “a guy named Ben has been talking to the caretaker about planting, and you” (gesturing to Peter) “need to get involved”. Sally talking about planter in the middle of the plot and gestures wider area. “No cars please thanks” she says. She wants the area to be a place for people and planting. That's what she wants.

“And the Red Tower” I speak up, “do people want to be involved?”

“Nope people aren't interested, they're apathetic”.

Peter says “Maybe the continuum of greenness can go over to Red Tower”.

Sally: “Sort of...maybe”. She gestures with hand: “That place for tourists” (pointing to the walls) “that place for students—no trouble but no interaction—and this place for residents. People don’t want to get involved in things” she says. “Or they want things then other will say, well that’s *their* thing”.

Alas, I am affected by her smart dismissal of RT after being more open over the summer.

“The space is not big enough for big events” she continues—“for community halls that type of thing” (Me thinking: What about intimacy, eh?) But instead I say: “What about the kids?”. She says there are none in the area (Me thinking: eh?) I extend my arms to point over, saying “But it could *be* a space for people,” (feeling behind this statement is that *I* don’t want it, *they* can have it..)

Peter meets my arm with his and interjects—“The green could extend, it could be an active part”. His more realistic and relaxed nature counters mine over-anxious enthusiasm...It’s neutral when we talk about the plants. I listen (trying not to feel too sulky)...maybe not paying too much attention cos I see kids and mums coming of over road (I count about seven...maybe that is it across the whole estate?). Then I notice Linda’s bike by the side of the CYC porter cabin “Linda?” (seeing the CYC guy standing there inquisitively too).

She pops her head round smiling—“Well that’s nice!” she says, and then comes over. I’m relieved. Peter and Sally are still sharing ideas for the tarmac space. Gesturing over the recently redundant earth dug up by the builders—Sally says “you need to get in touch with the right people who might be acting fast (this week!)”. Then I notice also Cathy tentatively looking, standing on our side of the CYC porter cabin who comes over to talk, introduce her to Peter. So there’s me, Peter, Linda, Cathy and Sally chatting—we must look a right party in a place that hardly has anybody.

Another resident, Zara turns up later as we are dispersing. We talk, and I hand her a feedback form. Young girl, feel friendly, smiling. “How do you feel about Red tower?” I ask. Head cocked to one side “Apathetic, not bothered, be good if it was something—no sure though”. Cleaning products in there. “It needs to be open” she says. I circle my email address on the feedback form,

so she can contact me. She makes inquiries about noisy students—“Listen, they are right disturbance, can you help?” I say I can’t promise anything but pass on her comments to Jenny.

Then I hop on my bike and head home...feeling a bit fagged.

11-02-16 Door Knocking

My goodness the approach for consulting residents is difficult. I have created feedback forms (see Appendix D.vii) and popped them in envelopes with the PhD information sheet and a poster inviting people to come chat with me about the upcoming Red Tower workshop. Now I need to get them out to as many people as possible.

Today, I went back to the flats I went with Peter on Tues, this time with Libby. Some had left the feedback floor on the door, or taped to window. It was great! Libby laughed at my evident glee. As a past door-knocker, she gives suggestions of strategy for trying to get hold of those in flats: leave notes. I did for two but felt uncomfortable. Don’t think torn paper with handwritten notes and email are very credible (later I start writing on the envelopes themselves). But then again, Libby has a point: we need to show that we tried.

I should have done this consultative stuff first, last summer.

We got to bottom—number 20: really glad we knocked, the chap who couldn’t talk had only gone and done it! Libby suggests we target the immediate nearby places. Those most impacted by the sight of Red Tower.

We knock on Doug’s door and he’s there with his denim jacket (he’d told me his singer friend had given it to him). He picks up an acoustic guitar, and speaks directly to Libby, who takes control of the conversation. He nods a lot, and agrees to spread the word.

We go to the next block of flats. Most no answer. But one lady invited us in! It’s the old lady with the walking frame, who’d been speaking to Sally, she had a slight Scottish accent. Name of Julie.

Both myself and Libby entered and she introduced us into her lounge area which she pointed out very quickly looked straight at the Red Tower from the window.

We were asked to sit down and so we did. Tea? None for Libby, but I had hot water in a mug. So we started talking then about the view of the Red Tower. Julie told us how she sits in her chair and looked out of the windows and imagines the foreign legion and ancient men in uniforms

marching across the walls. She also likes to look at the birds, the blackbirds and sparrows. She often refills her bird-feeder that hangs from one of the trees in the garden area facing the Red Tower. She can see all four seasons from that window. And she also says she likes it as it is, watching the romantic couples cuddling on the walls, and the geocaching people who don't know where the geocache is (but she does). Her eyes twinkle at the last bit. She likes watching the walkers who come and sit at the picnic tables in the garden. "But", and she stresses this "I don't want a canteen!"

Libby says that that's probably not what's going to happen and we are still asking people what they think the building should do in the area.

Julie puts her head to one side "Well, things happen here sometimes without people being asked, for example those edible beds. Who said that could happen?! The cats will wee on them."

I explain at that point that it had been Sally's idea brought about with the introduction of Peter from Edible York, and they had had to act fast because of the work that was being done to the tarmac area by the flood rehabilitation team.

Julie said "Well. The decision's been made without consultations (happened too quickly!)"

I suggest maybe Peter comes round to speak to Julie. She agrees to her meet me and fill in one of my forms to be picked up on Tuesday 16th at 1030. Taken photos of her window view and will share with her.

On way out, I speak to CYC Officer sat the in porta cabin. Twiddling his thumbs feeling angsty about not working on the project but waiting. Taking order from on high but doesn't seem to be able to do anything. Aware of the frustrations of the community from angry Facebook page posts. He thinks something is going to happen.



Figure 46 My message left in the letter box.



Figure 47 The view from Julie's window.



Figure 48 A completed the feedback form attached to participant's door.

16/02/16 More door knocking

Late to Red Tower. Sunny, but very cold. I go to number sixteen. No answer. Go to speak to the Estate Manager tell her I'm around. She can't come to the Residents Meetings at 3pm with MP (organised by Jonathan on Facebook). Say I will pass on what I hear.

Go to next flat and speak to a couple on upper floor. They show me photos (we're talking about the floods) coming to meeting later with MP.

Went to see to Cathy...she's still not well. Sit down. Talk about the flooding I take notes. I ask her about the stuff she might be able to do. She agrees she could take part in partnership, I need to pop by Thursday to pick up stuff. (Later she says she is too ill to get involved).

Going back to see Julie. She offered me tea. Think she was pleased—"oh its only you!" She gave me back the form but we sat and chatted in her lovely (warm sitting room) light shining in. Her neighbour came in we talked. I was getting a bit fidgety but then I thought "Wait Katrina". They got onto the subject of Walmgate and talking of the history INL club (Julie didn't like it "not my scene" as she says) and then she brought up some books on Walmgate and offered to lend them to me, which I happily accepted.

Had to be getting on and went upstairs to talk to another neighbour. The man in the Heavy Metal T-shirt says he might want a café but is concerned about the fabric of building. Got into a debate with this chap about conserving heritage or changing things. He was happy to fill out the form and said he would also be interested in attending the workshop I'd advertised on the poster (although he never did get back to me on this).

No others left envelopes, so that's it for the day. As I walked over to Red Tower, I spotted a gent. We talked, I gave him a form. He didn't know what Red Tower was. Chatted about flood too though. He added "It's a cultural desert around here", as he walked away.

I bumped into Kayleigh—she'd brought milk for the MP meeting.

Later:

Meeting of York MP...15 odd residents turned up, bundled in, bustled around listening talking, both loudly and quietly. Really atmospheric under those LED red lights.

I made teas for people. I gave one to Jess, one of the residents I'd met at the Christmas Event. She cried. Said she felt impacted by the floods despite not being flooded out.

After the meeting I chatted to Zara, her fiancé Tom and Sally. In talking to Tom, about what the RT could be, he suggested a cinema...he walks around the space to show how it could be done. Sits on the horseshoe wall. "You'd have deck chairs here", gesturing with his arms. "That'd be great", I replied, really enthused.



Figure 49 Up and running again © Jonathan.

20-02-16 flood-Photo competition event

Ahead of this event—which I'd organising with Jonathan—I stick up a few more leaflets. Sat on bench writing last notes and a white-bearded gent with a walking stick came sat next to me, he asked what I was doing. I told him, gave him envelope and feedback form. Said he'd never been upstairs but wanted to go. I said, join the Facebook page and come to our events! (months later we did organise a visit and he gave me a book about old postcards, as I'd said I liked them).

Then I went to Red Tower after and Jonathan there already chatting to some tourists who've wondered in. Lucy, a small, smiley American therapist turns up, and we walk to Morrisons, to get cups whilst small talking on floods. She said she still feels unsettled.

Coming back and more people have turned up. Offering tea now, (Lucy having to help!) Tea sugar, coffee. Doug, turns up—poor guy, not very well, looking haggard. More and more people. Two Ridings funds lady arrives (bless her with the cold!) Kayleigh there. Hugs. Crowding into the space. Now things start to get a bit blurry lots of people to chat too!. Matt—a 40ish flood aftermath volunteer, ex-offender & homeless chap, met through Kayleigh’s group—turns up with more cups (“Thanks!”, I shout). I laugh at our lack of proper facilities since everything has been destroyed. In reaction, the Two Ridings lady suggests, “Oh well we could award you funding—to help people”. Heart jumps into mouth. “Really?” “Oh yess”, she’s nodding.

Matt is then asking me a question, “What’s this?”, he says, showing me a Guildhall Ward Leaflet under my nose, “two months late—we haven’t heard anything from them?!”

I say “It’s the Guildhall Ward Councillor. I invited her to today.” In the meantime I also introduce him to the Two Ridings lady. They start an in-depth conversation.

Then Libby has turned up and Linda with YET MORE CAKE. Everyone coming in, people avoiding toes! Pile in to space, lots of conversations now (gets a bit blurry).

Guildhall Ward councillor arrives. Matt, Kayleigh and Two Ridings lady having major chat, so I introduce them all to her. Matt immediately introduces himself as the chap who wants to be a local flood warden. Then couple of more of the residents turn up. Get one to fill out forms, and introduce the other to Jonathan, who’s been running around as much as I have.

Speaking to Kayleigh later, she says: “The Red Tower has proved itself!”

Chat with another resident, Pat, with her naughty dog. “Why not do a Horrible History event?” she suggests? Me thinking ARGH why did I not think of that!? Both mine and her eyes wide, smiling.

Starting to quieten down, finally. Get radio on. Starting to sing with Jonathan. Starting to dance a bit too. Go upstairs and Matt is there telling some tourists about the history of the building (he’s explaining, laying thick the story of the stone mason VS brickies. And pointing out the old ‘loo’.)

Slowly the numbers of people starts to decrease. Jonathan, Matt and I sort the cleaning products. Texts from Jess and Cathy—it's OK they couldn't make it. I notice Sally hasn't been over this time either.

Later I send an email to Frank and Lilac, regarding feasibility project.

Hiya,

Yes thanks to Frank for the sketches. As I have explained to Lilac, I have feedback, but I am still getting stuff back and hope to have most by 26th. There may come some after this but I will give you a pretty fully-formed draft by 26th and then if anything major comes up I will let you know (and this will go into my own report too).

I want to add to Lilac's second point about the kitchen unit--is there any way we could have an extendible/fold-able counter? This way you create more space as and when you need it?

Plus I notice 22 notifications on twitter. From my experience, that's not bad at all.

Jonathan's interview (28-04-16, Local Café)

My intentions align very, very much with the intentions of the Red Tower Project in general. I was born 71 years ago [...] I was brought up on a council estate; the Red Tower is back dropped by a council estate. So therefore I do feel that I've got a bit of an infinity with the people that are living in social housing around the Red Tower, and I do believe in that the Red Tower has got a role to play in providing for the needs and support of that social housing group, if you like.

[...]

So my wife who lived in the flats in Walmgate when they were first built, because they used to live in a prefab around the back-- by Woolworths just the other side of Walmgate Bar. And they moved into these new flats, and in those flats everybody knew each other, were all neighbours up there down there, that way, that way; everybody knew each other. But here it's not the same. And so you've got to sort of like try to find a way to get them talking to each other, to get them

to engage with each other. Getting the engagement with each other and getting engaged with us.

So, I honestly feel that the ideas relating to open days, free this, do that, would be a good one to get people engaged. It may be disappointing for the first couple of attempts at doing this. It may feel that we have a Tower full of folks ready to serve people and tables full of cakes, and nobody comes. So, that hasn't got to be a— That hasn't got to be the be all and end all of it. Perseverance is going to have to be there all the time. You know, you can't just say, 'Now we aren't doing that again because it didn't work'.



Figure 50. Kayleigh and volunteers help to organise the cleaning products.



Figure 51. Jonathan puts up a temporary noticeboard.



Figure 52 Children use sticks to make a wooden fire/hut near Red Tower.

29-02-16 Reporting back—Feasibility Report

So today after working the weekend on the consultation data and my own report...I have fully recognised the challenges (and consequences!) of my taking all the data, knowledge and experience over the last few months from my own head and trying fit it all into a couple of sides of A4. Plus the weight of carrying everyone's opinions through my own words. I am the filter and the 'conduit' as Lilac has said. AND the crazy thing is...I find I have no time at all to be 100% worried, reflexive and think about it. I hope I will get this chance again and after the meeting tomorrow.

I went to Rosemary Place today to meet with people from the Backhouse for 11 to talk about Red Tower and their project-the Back House, in Accombe. I was interested to meet them as they expressed an interest to join "the COMA group"...Lilac had expressed interest/confusion at this term. As I'm going meet them I say hi to the CYC officer, who's talking to a guy in the car on way over. Climb over wall, (can see they are cold, arms crossed and huddled together!) I unlock the padlock and get them inside (not that it is much warmer).

We chat about the floods the relations with residents. They ask me lots of questions: "What can you see this being?", asks Sandra. I explain the whole trajectory of the feasibility...because the floods had an impact on this. Sandra and Yvonne muse that they wouldn't be sure how they'd cope if the back house had been flooded. Several wall walkers pop their heads in, some go upstairs with my encouragement (I hand them a torch) and I say to the ladies that it would be easy enough to make it a little museum with a café (Yvonne had mentioned they'd seen people walk by already while they'd waited for me.) BUT I continue, that would be to the detrimental exclusions of the residents outside. Yvonne says "yes same problem at the back house, needing to reach that level of sustainable tourism."

I say let's go upstairs. Sandra a bit unsteady ("Those stairs are difficult!") Yvonne coming up with mouth open in a grin—"it a bigger space! So much space!" I talk about the bricks show them the difference seem really excited, and suddenly they have ideas pouring forth—kiddies sleepover is one I remember Yvonne suggesting.

After a while of talking, Sandra's feet get cold from the wood, we go back down and we discuss this COMA thing that'd come up in the email. Yvonne was asking about it, and said in her role she'd been to a meeting down south where they'd basically talked about Sheffield and York's

'COMA's as an organised network between our different groups of heritage regeneration projects (via Locality, and a number of other ones...Reconomy?) I, somewhat confused, said, "COMA was what we did, not a network as such." So we laughed a bit and Yvonne said maybe this was the ship that was being built around them, rather than ready to sail. "'They' (Locality) want not to duplicate training and expertise, want to hit us all with same training days etc" said Sandra. Covering costs I guess is sensible. But I said I was a bit cynical, "couldn't we just meet in a pub? And chat?" Yvonne said "But the Backhouse needs the experts to do the feasibility". So I can see that Red tower has been a rather lucky (and part of a bigger scheme). Sandra said A CYC guy (Head of Parks?) suggested we all get in touch. So a new network could well be emerging. So I, wondering aloud, asked, "Are we being sheeped together as a group already even though we've only just started having chats? Because I've spoken to Clements Hall, and we'd agreed that there might be a way of helping each other out and developing a historical venues network"...(Sandra said they'd spoken to them too).

We have to break the meeting. I climb gingerly over the wall as they say goodbye (they laugh at my struggling as they go round the long way). Feel like I've seen a bigger picture today!

7.6 The Lessons of the Second Spring

Finishing up the feasibility project and my consultation report (see appendix), unanticipated meetings with key connections, and the Red Tower workshop.



Figure 53 Entrance path to Red Tower after a snow shower in March.



Figure 54. Community notice board in Rosemary Place.

01-03-16 Reporting back with Lilac & Priya

Meeting with Lilac and Priya, an expert facilitator who's going to be chairing the Red Tower 'future workshop' as part of the feasibility project.

Lilac first off says that my report is good and agrees that "it give a whole picture, never seen it laid out before". Then she follows "I'm wanting to comment first on the Your Café/PAYF side of things after having a chat with a Your Café member of staff. Currently, Your Café is not really interested so it's clear we're having to change tactics". I agree but say I will try to find others if possible. She also wants to know "how much people are willing to pay for hiring the building?" I falter, "It's really difficult to bring that into conversation generally. Found I get to the bit where they are just getting an understanding of the building..."

Priya agrees: "It's an intangible, abstract concept at this stage". Lilac: "Easier with businesses". She can see how what I've said regarding having therapeutic counsellors will affect the planning. For example, should it be sound proofed?

Priya turns attention to the structure of the meeting we're planning. She ask me bring out the headline figures bring from the feedback I'd gathered. "And can you print out key moments in photographs to stick around the wall?"

Then, she asks about the bigger picture: "Where are the utilities going, how many people fitting in etc?"

Lilac: "all being planned. Basically Frank has done design for two rooms".

I show Priya Frank's designs on my computer (pass laptop over!)

Priya: "Can we put these on display? A4?" Lilac: "Yep, I can sort this. Pulling together a lot of threads currently. Someone else is looking at the overall cost of designs."

"Are you confident you will have that for 19th?" asks Priya "Yes", replies Lilac,

Priya nods "good. Are you happy with the agenda I've proposed?"

Lilac: "SWOT and pestle bit technical might confuse people if you send it out beforehand". Priya "Yeah, will do this on day. Using flipchart, pieces of paper. And I'll put the agenda on a wall so everyone can see".

After working on the day's structure, Priya asks "What are the next steps? Need to finalise the organisational structure and see who is stepping up".

Lilac: "Kat is stepping back. Don't want to lose that momentum nor lose Kat's contacts."

I explain that we have some people who are really involved, including Jonathan, Kayleigh, Jess and Matt.

Priya nods. "Ok, what about funding options?"

Lilac: "Lottery fund, landfill fund. Kitchen specific things. crowdfunding. Trick is going to be how to take next level"

Priya: "Hmm, yes, we don't want to lose positivity at the end of the meeting...but needs to be said that we've got a next step. The tower has so many ideas. Lots of potential...need to keep you directed."

14-03-16 Impromptu meeting at red Tower

With the intention of meeting Jonathan to talk about the volunteer issue, I cycled into the rain down the cold, wet, Foss Islands road on my bike and parked at Waitrose. Rang Jonathan, surprised to hear a lot of noise in the background...he explained that "a faction of the Latter Day Saints church are coming to pick up the left over cleaning products and take 'em to their garage". Barny, a 40ish volunteer from London, has turned up as has Jess, Doug and Mr Compost.

A bit perplexed (thought it was just going be us!!) When I arrive, sure enough everyone is there and Jess is serving the tea out. She offers me a camomile (thanks!) I sit on a fold up chair by the wall, out of the way, eat my sandwich and just watch things happening around me...Jonathan instructing Barny with the boxes and Jess chatting to a bloke outside. Matt turns up and speaks to Jess...this guy outside standing by the wall is upset and shouting. They go outside to chat more.

I see Peter working on raised bed for Sally's project, I go over and offer him a hand, but he seems pretty productive by himself, so I leave him to it.

Red Tower cleared, Jonathan and I start everyone on the flat packing of cardboard boxes. Outside, I ask one of the flood activists (whose other side of wall) to ask Mr Compost (also wall side) if he can take them to skip on his trailer. In return she asks me to ask Barny (who's in Red

Tower) if he can help the LDS guys on the other side! We laugh about the fuff caused by the wall. Later Doug falls over it trying to get across (he laughs too).

Matt and Jess inside with Doug, Jonathan is reorganising the futon (which I'd tried to chuck away last month). Then eventually Jonathan and I sit down, (Matt and Doug are smoking in the doorway). Jess, who's made me another cup of tea, joins us.

So us ladies are sat on directors chairs (donated by Libby) Jonathan on the old futon, then Matt and John and Doug join us. Doug and Matt standing (Matt closes door so sound of the generator is buffered). All of a sudden it feels like a meeting. I guess I was chairing it too, as I'm there with my notepad. I am talking about the volunteers I want to try and amass: Sean of YPP's idea to have PUBLIC run café, with at least one paid person on either full or part time basis...but its been really difficult to meet people (looking at Jess who agrees, she says only just herself learning people's names in the area!)

Mr Compost; "You need to get word out to the press."

Jonathan says "We've been doing that", and Matt adds "York Mix did a really lovely piece on it." Then he changes subject: "flooding outside, guys, 'round corner. Need to get that sorted". Jonathan, laughs "Don't wanna know", but after a pause, (opens his arms wide) and says, "The flooding has actually brought the Red tower to forefront...and we now have a data line for how high the water was" (pointing).

Matt, standing outside: "I can see a charity box for that"...and then that starts on a conversation about organisations and residents associations. Jess is interested in what Matt says about there being no chairman for Nav Rd RA.

Doug, referring to a meeting the other night with the Guildhall Ward Council, starts to talking too: "They (other residents present) don't want noffink to do wit Tower, they want space 109 back". Matt nods, agreeing. And says there could be another potential Walmgate association...Jess agrees: the lady she spoke to at the meeting said Walmgate was a different demographic to Nav Rd (with more businesses).

Matt, Jess, Jonathan and Mr Compost get to talking about how RA organisations work. Jess saying she keeps hearing they don't have a chairman and someone needs to step up...but Jonathan, leaning forward says, "It's the secretary is what oils the wheels."

I speak again about volunteers for Red Tower. Do we try to do more leaflets? Matt: “No, think of Martha wanting to be left alone—residents are moaning about too many leaflets.” Jonathan saying YPP’ers will post a volunteer shout out on Facebook, he’ll put it on his timeline... “And tourists will use café” interjects Doug, and I reply, “I know *but* we need to work out who will run it and how it can be useful for the people here” (I’m getting impatient again I can tell). I quietly say: “Having spoken to a resident at number four, I get the impression that it is not for everyone”.

Jess says: “Yes coz it’s still historical monument and the practicalities of the wall outside divides it, it’s a barrier, need to get that sorted as much as possible...not part of the mindset. Need a gap.” Doug (referring to the days after the floods) “Yeah an’ I saw when you were open and came down and helped.”

“Yeh”, I say, “you saw out of the window didn’t you?”

Matt adds, “ ‘e couldn’t help to see out the window, ‘e was marooned!”

Some waterproofed wall-walkers knock on the door, Matt and Doug let them in and begin telling them the history, pointing out interpretation boards, show then upstairs. Later see Doug explaining the floods. When they leave he shuts the door and says “If any more tourists turn up, *they can ring the bell!*” (I chuckle.)

While that is happening, Jess is talking to me about the volunteering issue. She asks: “Do you have a list of people you know?” I say, “Yes, have some phone numbers, contacts of about 24 residents”. She says “Why not coordinate an event and we can group them together and speak, get to know each other? So hard for people to meet each other on the estate. I’d love to start a Residents Association and hold it here”. I grin and say “Music to my ears!” She continued “Yeah, that is the dream.”

As we leave, Jonathan says he’ll make poster for volunteers tonight and can set it up print out for noticeboard tomorrow.

Later, I realised I’d clean forgot about Peter shovelling Edible York compost into raised bed in middle of tarmac, surrounding by windows of flats, all on his own. In the rain. Oh dear!



Figure 55 Jess and Doug stood watching the discussion between the horseshoe wall.

Jess's interview (26-04-16, Local Café)

Kat: Okay. So, to start off, can I ask you to give your account of how we know each other?

Jess: Okay. From me living on the estate and I don't know how I missed it, but last year I know that you told me there had been lots of leaflets dropped out in the past, but I didn't see anything until probably just before Christmas I think it was. And at the bottom of my stairs there was a leaflet about the Red Tower. And I thought, 'Okay, it's an open day this weekend.' So I came and had a look. And that's how I met you.

[...]

Kat: Actually, shall we talk about the wall a little bit more?

Jess: Yeah, yeah.

Kat: Why is that important to you as a part of the project?

Jess: There are probably a couple of reasons for me. The fact that the wall goes all the way around the Red Tower where the estate part is. So the wall finishes and then it goes all the way round. And then there's a— If I say a snicket-way, or a gunnel or a cut-through [...]. For me,

because of my limited mobility, I have to walk all the way around and then back round. So it's not far, but it's all extra movement for me, which can be a strain.

[...]

I've lived there for nearly four years and I've known some of my neighbours to smile at and a couple of my local neighbours in the block that I live in and I know them all to talk to. And the people further afield, just a smile and a hello, how are you. Since the floods, I've got people I've been talking to, people stop me in the street. I've had the council...estate manager ringing me, saying, 'Do you want to come and pick the blankets up Jess, because we're closing the hub down on Friday?' So I feel like I've become a part of that. And I'd like other people to stay in that. That we don't lose people going back into their little square blocks and hide away again. I'd really like that community spirit to stay. And I've noticed since people have come back, it's almost gotten quieter with more people, because not as many people are talking.

Kat: That's really interesting. Okay.

Jess: So for me, that hole opening it up and keeping the momentum going while there's still that real community spirit, would not be just opening up a brick wall, it would be opening up the Red Tower.

19-03-16 Red Tower Workshop

(14 people attending: Jess, me Lilac, Priya, Frank, Jonathan, Ed of TCV, Walmgate Nursery Contact, Kayleigh, School Contact, Jenny. Later Lucy-therapist arrives late and Claire comes in stays to the end. These people have responded to a call out on emails when they said they'd said to me they'd be interested to be more involved in the Red Tower).



Figure 56 Attendees of the Red Tower workshop.



Figure 57. Priya sets out the options for different organisational structures



Figure 58 Images and feedback results from the Consultation Report stuck to wall.

Summary of the day:

Priya (facilitator of the workshop) starts with the introduction and asks everyone to state why they are there:

[Jonathan: "I'm already in facilitatory role, fixing things in early days, and now moving forward to the future."

Lilac: "I came to Red Tower on a whim really. Felt it was a good place to start something exciting. Want to know if we're onto something here."

Jess: "I'm a resident of Navigation Road. Want to be involved, want it to be a hub in our community, want the spirit from floods to carry on. As a point of contact. I love history and want to see it used."

Ed: "Interested in the project as part of my work at TCV. I want to add...you are doing this so properly".

Kayleigh: "I used to have normal life...but then the floods happened. Ended up distributed cleaning products across the city and needed storage. Kat said move all the stuff in Red Tower. Fell in love with it, it's become a community. Want to see it being used."

Tash: "Just fell in love with the building"

Frank architect: "Want to see general status of the brief and what do people want."

Nursery Contact: “We’re looking for outdoor play area in Walmgate. Trying to find out how much time to renovate it. Who’s going to be involved.”

Heather: “Think Red Tower is a lovely place to live near. Brilliant place to do more storytelling. Good Exhibition space. Want to know how I could help.”

School Contact: “I’m from Fishergate school. I use York as an outdoor classroom. Part of developing idea. Want to know how we can be involved.”

Jenny. “Want to know how to get students involved. It’s an absolutely fantastic project. Want to know how we can move this forward and how the university can be involved.]

Lilac (project leader) then gives background of TIM and aspirations for Red Tower--highlights now the need for structure and organisation and that this meeting is the final part of pre-feasibility study which is looking at whether opening up the Red Tower for community uses is possible and viable.

Frank presented his preliminary architectural designs on paper which inform the pre-feasibility study. He proposed sketches includes connecting utilities to the building and restoring this Scheduled Monument to become a flexible community space and kitchen / café. He states that generally, the work to the interior can be reversible, giving prominence to the brickwork and potentially sourcing good quality second hand material (sinks for example). He received comments and questions from the group. Much more was said on this (including subject of flooding--he highlighted that maybe the units could be stainless steel.) The next stage, following pre-feasibility work, will involve developing designs further and submitting planning application.

Kat (advisor) gives a summary on the consultations she's undertaken over last few months and highlights the different interests of groups (residents, businesses, history groups, schools, visitors).

Priya then explains the differences between different types of business models relevant to Red Tower: Charitable Incorporated Organisation (CIO) & Community Interest Company (CIC). The different advantages and disadvantages of each model are discussed.

CIO was perceived as the preferable model for Red Tower. This was due to

- It is incorporated, therefore there is limited liability on individuals
- tax efficiency

- the ability to apply for different pots of funding,
- the fact that trustees aren't paid (compared to directors in a CIC),
- and because the emphasis of the use of space has changed (no longer focused on Real Junk Food Café),
- There is flexibility in the writing of the objectives (can cover a broader range of social aspirations)
- A CIO takes around 40 days to set up
- It is registered with Charities Commission only
- If turnover less than £250,000 p/a then reporting requirements are relatively simple.

Working on the principle that Red Tower may become a CIO, those present were asked if they would be interested in becoming trustees (min of 3 needed to start a CIO).

Lilac, Jess, Jonathan, Jenny, Kayleigh and Tash raised their interests in this role with others showing interest in volunteer or advisory positions.

Next Steps:

--To complete pre-feasibility by end of March 2016.

--Meeting of steering group/potential trustees and other interested individuals which will discuss above in more detail and where we go from here.



Figure 59 Core group of volunteers meeting to discuss further the sketches

22-03-16 Talking Logos & Kitchens

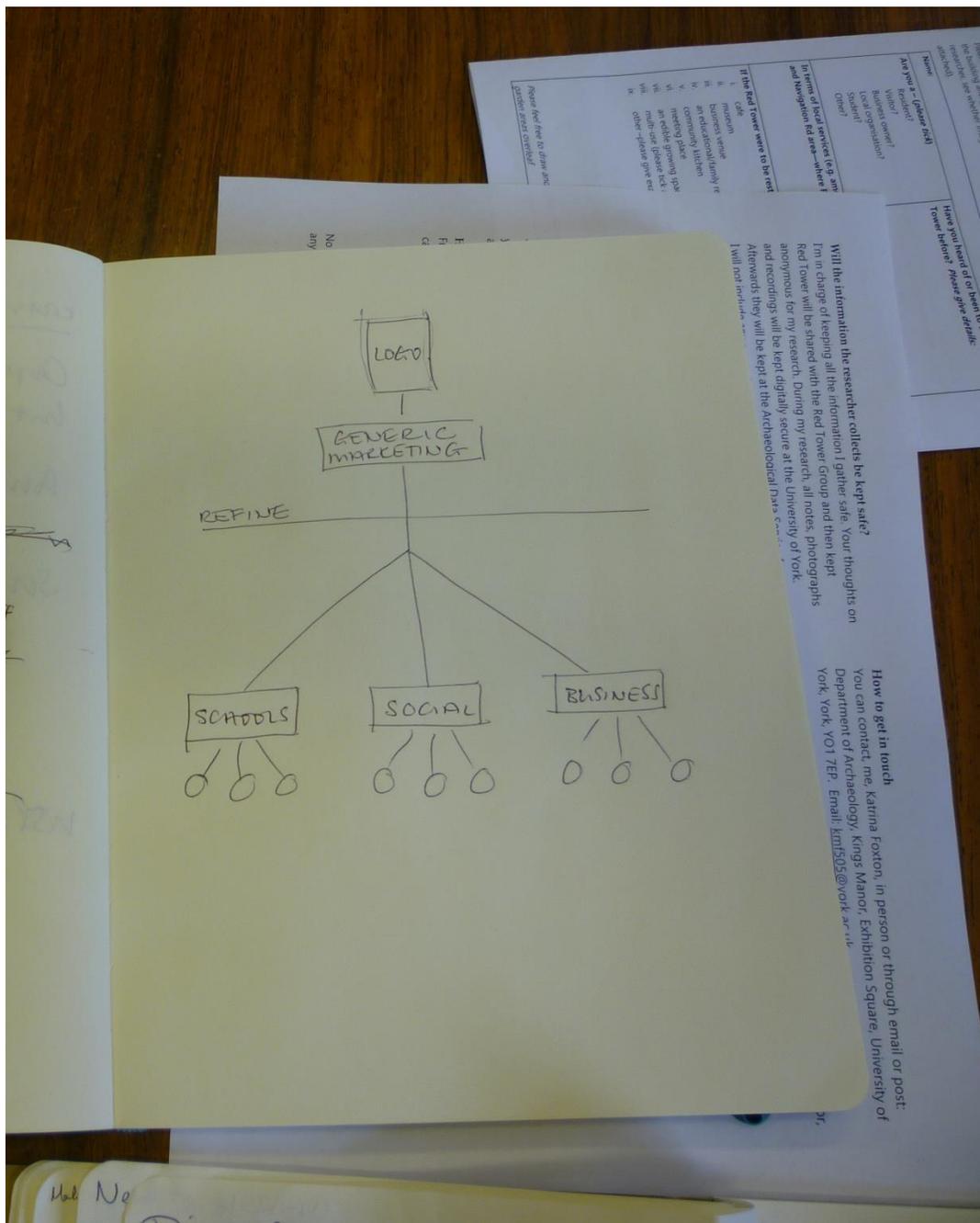


Figure 60 Sketch by Sarah indicating best practices towards defining a logo.

Today I met Sarah, an interpretation designer, at Bivouac. She said, in response to my question about the meaning of the term “interpretation is teasing out the whole bucket load of information and make it applicable”.

We talk of the uniqueness of what Red Tower is trying to do (she highlights we already have too many audiences). And we discuss the need for a logo to give credibility and show its key messages. At her suggestion, I agree that having some York College students use this as a project would be a good idea. Lastly, we discuss potential avenues for profit, such as merchandise (postcards, tea towels etc).

Afterwards, I went back to the PhD office and bumped into a fellow heritage researcher. We got to talking ‘shop’ and I showed her the Red Tower architectural drawings. “What do you think?” I said, “You’re an expert.”

“Not really” said she.

Me: “You’ve seen more historic buildings than I have!”

So she looked at the pages as I turned them on the desk and hmmed.

I explained about the area and talked about the kitchen.

And then she, the “only thing I can comment on, and I don’t know or care for the building is that I have seen cases of kitchen that were just, you know, awkward. You’d walk in and see a kitchen...and it would be like somebody’s kitchen. Need to have kitchen sectioned off and separate. Also potentially need to specify who is actually using it.”

She mentions a case study where they hide the kitchen within storage. “It looks funky and quirky. But potentially seen lots of cases studies, particularly in churches, were people have asked for kitchens saying ‘oh everyone will use it’ but then gone ‘oh, nobody uses it’.

I’m thinking (baaaa!) and she’s saying “Sorry!” and I say “Nooo, this is great feedback, need to know, wouldn’t be doing my job otherwise. As I’m not a buildings expert I don’t have this insight”. “Yes”, she said “you’re more a facilitator!” I agree, nodding.

I ask for her case studies and hope she sends them.

I decide to call Lilac, I talk about the Biv meeting. I mention Tash and Sarah are both inclined towards tourism and merchandising...she said need to watch out for tea towels as not enough space even for that.

I also mention my colleague's comments. Lilac disagreed about the thinking of the space being dominated by the kitchen.

I suggest Frank might have to take on feedback from more heritage/archaeological peeps? Lilac answers "His part of the brief was to interpret from your consultations. The change from café to kitchen was momentous. But your brief wasn't to consult with these people at this stage.

Another wave of consultation will happen later as we still need to go through planning process and everything". (She's having a meeting with Harry to discuss just that tomorrow.) "And plans will need to go to public again anyway."

24-03-16 Meeting with Harry—How did The Red Tower get funding?

We'd agree to have a pseudo-supervisory/Red Tower conversation so, sitting at the West Office café, I asked Harry how the money had come to Red Tower. Harry's answer was that the COMA application had come to the council and that ideas (cases had been put forward). He had put forward Red Tower. Then, a decision-making process had happened and looking at his paper point to invisible decisions (saying "these guys are more complicated, this has more aspirations for example"). In the end he said Red Tower was chosen largely on the basis that, there was a mix of people with different resources, in terms of people, and it was deemed that this would deliver/realise a project. Also he mentioned that essentially the properties officer (who'd worked with Claire) will have heard about Red Tower from both Claire and himself (he admitted his own interest in the walls here). I nodded.

Then we are talking about the lease. "How is that going forward", I ask?

"A report is going to the executive for 28th April where they'll argue case to hand over the asset to the CIO." He continues: "The NEW Red Tower CIO will have to agree to and sign the lease. Then the pre app can start (a planning officer and Lilac have to talk about £££ for this). A planning application can then start and (potentially) the HE officer will allow the Scheduled Ancient Monument to happen as a parallel process".

Harry laughs, “I stupidly said to Lilac that the CYC would pay for utilities and reiterated that again today. This can start soon. As long as HE officer would be happy to maybe have two SAM apps (one for utilities and one for plans for the inside). He might frown at that—it might be cumbersome”.

29-03-16 CYC meeting

Present at this meeting within a room at West Offices were: a Locality Representative, CHM York student, Harry, the CYC Asset Officer, CYC Neighbourhoods Officer, Jonathan and myself. The purpose was to update these people who were involved in supporting the Red Tower feasibility funding back in October. Lilac and I summarised our findings from the recent workshop, with amendments or agreements from Jonathan. When asked by the asset manager, Lilac detailed the next stages for Red Tower (planning application and lease) including the two SAM consents.

At one point Harry stated that he could see the project being an exemplar heritage based project not only York-wide but nationally. He mentioned that there are also links to the discussions currently surrounding the future alternatives for the city walls, breathing new life into it and that he was really pleased. He also reiterated his agreement to pay for the utilities once it was understood where utilities would go.

The Neighbourhoods Officer asked if we had considered ward funding and Lilac suggested this might be useful in the long term. And there was some discussion as to how Red Tower would work with the potential new residents’ association; the Neighbourhoods Officer stated that there was the option/opportunity for RA’s to merge and her team was seeking to support these.

Lastly we explained that the next steps were the business plan and logo design. And Lilac stressed the need to keep momentum going.

7.7 Summer Reflections

An account of why I had to stay on a little longer to help with further public consultation. The residents BBQ and shaping up of Red Tower CIO (later to become a CIC!) Discussions on the success of the Red Tower.

11-05-16 Account of TCV Funding

And I've just come back from the local people's steering group meeting. Seventeen people were present including myself and Ed, the TCV officer, Lilac, Mr Compost, Matt, Kayleigh, Jess, Sally, Tom and Zara. And then there were several others from different necks of the wood – residents – and the Guildhall ward councillor.

Getting to the essence of this meeting is difficult in context and I could not ask for consent from all members so it is better to explain the reason for the meeting and the outcome.

Firstly, Ed, on being impressed with Red Tower project, was keen to award it with a substantial chunk of the TCV Lottery money before the end of his contract. But he could only allocate the money if he set up a 'local steering group' of people who lived nearby or on his patch. The idea was that such a group could discuss the allocation of £30,000 to several local projects (including Red Tower). He had struggled to amass such a group during his time and approached the Red Tower team via email to ask if anyone would step up to the task. Jess and Kayleigh took up this call to sit on the steering group. I also introduced Ed to Sally when he was on site one day and told her to ask about funding for her garden project. I told Matt about the meeting too.

The outcome was a group of seventeen (including applicants, the aforementioned, other residents) approved all six local projects including Red Tower which was allotted roughly £22,000. This is what it needed for the next stage in development (to pay for the next planning stage). However, because this was such a large percent of the funds and there had been some question as to the relevance of the project with the nearby residents, ('apathy' was raised by both Sally and Matt) the funding was given on condition that it be given in stages and continue to report back to the TCV steering group. In addition, more was to be done in the way of community engagement.

14-05-16 'CIO' Meeting

Extract from minutes of CIO meeting with trustees:

"Matters arising

Formulation of Red tower CIO—The Red Tower CIO would be formed and the TIM in York would close. TIMs ethos would inform part of the constitution. In terms of remit

some felt city remit would be too wide, yet funding opportunities may require a wider perimeter. York city boundary was decided as a good perimeter to this end but it would be at the discretion of trustees—considering their capacity—to make decisions on project work as it arises.”

21-05-16 Red Tower/Rosemary garden

I'd gone to meet Matt for something and ended up seeing Sally and Ed about the garden plans. Sally had been complaining that talking to people about project around here was like flogging a dead horse and that people were 'streetist'—only wanting good things near them.

Matt turned up so we went over to chat at Red Tower and start talking about this whole steering group meeting and Sally's stance came up a bit more. And Matt said that he could see her feeling that the Red Tower was just absorbing all the money, all the funds that could otherwise be going to her project.

And I asked if he thought Sally saw us as outsiders – myself included?

He replied, "That's rubbish because she's not even from York originally. So don't give me any of that."

Matt then talked about our need to get the word out more and that we need to think about the people up the other end of the estate. And he says that basically we need to get feedback forms

again out to the whole area, wider field, and that he would put some ideas about the leaflet on paper and send it to me.

“But we need to next have a meeting somewhere else other than in this place, to see elsewhere, get a different perspective’. I nodded and said, “Yeah, completely right.”



Figure 61. Linda and Matt sit on the horseshoe wall one day, talking to Martha



Figure 62. Doug smokes a cigarette outside.

Matt's interview (29-04-16, local Café)

It just isn't viable for it to be open every day. I don't know, we could maybe have some sort of residents' meetings in there once a month or something like that. It could be used as an emergency centre during any sort of crisis, if the Tower isn't affected badly then we could use that as a base, so to say, maybe to work from. For myself in particular it would be ideal. It's right on the edge of the estate and you can see everything that goes on from there. Plus, a lot of the residents walk past there to come to Morrison's or whatever when they're shopping, so it's an ideal point for meeting people. I do think there should be more residents' notice boards down there. That's one of the problems we have at the moment. There are two notice boards on Navigation. There's one at the end of Rosemary and there's one at the top on...I can't remember the name of the street now.

INTERVIEWER: I think it's Margaret Terrace.

RESPONDENT: Is it Margaret Terrace? Yes, there's one there. One gave us a thriving shopping centre when that was put there. Since then we've got all these amenities on this side now, so the residents, instead of going to Walmgate and walking past the notice boards, they're coming out the Red Tower side and of course there's no notice boards, so they can't see what's going on.

22-05-16 Short trip to Red tower

I was picking up something I'd left at the Red Tower one summery evening. As I came to the horseshoe wall I noticed a youngish, thin chap sitting against it with his back to the tower, drinking a can of beer. He looked like he was chilling out so I went about my business.

As I came out he asked me, "Do you know what's happening here?" I was surprised he'd spoken but said yes and that I was the researcher for the project. He nodded and said, in his Yorkie accent: "Y' know you should make it so that people with mental health problems can come here. Coz I suffer from mental anxiety. I'd like it if there were more things in the area I could go to". "Thanks", I said, "I will take that on board."

Matt turned up on his bike and I chatted with him a bit about the notice board, and when I turned round, another young man and woman had joined the first man.

So I nodded to him and then left.

Isabel & Craig's interview (29-04-16, home of participants)

Craig: The years we have been here [since 1980s], and the only people we never saw going in and out of the Red Tower were council, and I have often wondered myself, 'What is in there?' We just thought it was a warehouse for the council. I have seen tourists walk by there and they have that little plaque to read and then they are away, they have got nothing else to do. We have seen in their minds, they are wondering what all of this was about this red building. So by it being open, I think it is a good thing.

Isabel: Yes, it is giving them more of an insight, like you said the council used to just keep some machinery in there, didn't they?

Kat: It was basically like you say a warehouse, a shed and now it has got tables with tablecloths in.

Craig: When you were walking over this bridge, the tourists that have got lost because they have come down the river and walked in a straight line, the first thing they say, 'Could you tell us where the Red Tower is?' That is the first thing, so we just say, 'Go up here, turn left, straight down.' We have told loads.

Isabel: Because on their maps it will say, 'follow the river,' then they would just carry on walking, and then they would get to here, come and look and there aren't any signs or anything. So they stand on that corner and sometimes you feel like going, "it's that way!"



Figure 63 Isabel shows me the view from her window; tourists often get lost in the area.

22-06-16 BBQ prep

I've been organising a residents' BBQ with Jess, it's been on the cards for a while. But I wanted it to be a continuation of the consultation, a way to show people, hey look, this is what you said, this is what we did. So I ask Lilac for advice on how to get this out.

Me: Stick plans on boards?

Lilac: YES

Me: What questions are we asking people for feedback? —feedback board (not ideas board)?

Lilac: Need to show where things are up to. What I see happening is to avoid endless discussion. Those ideas already are reflecting feedback (gathered over winter) which have gone into planning pre-application, and we'll gain initial feedback from planners.

ME: Postcard suggestion?

Lilac: not as good now. More: 'here are plans do you like them?' So keep it simple. Only 3 of us available on the day. Use Post-its. This is what we could say: "These are our designs following feedback over the winter."

1. Do you like it ?
2. do you want to see any changes?
3. Would you like to see anything different. POINT.

ME: yes Ok, I will try to make use of pointy arrows etc.

Lilac: yeah and we'll have people saying "Oh yay, but why don't you"...and then they can put some ideas down. And it's quite quantitative then. And we can get some feel whether it's going down like a lead balloon. Keep it quite simple.

ME: do we need to put what is going terms of planning have another event, in Sept this is where we're going next? This isn't the last time to consult.

Lilac: Yeah maybe, Council quick came back straight away with formal acknowledge to give final acknowledgement, put in the system straight away. 3 weeks. Sometime in July in position to put in formal application.

ME: do you want postcards to go out to residents?

Lilac: no—flyers needed instead. Can you compile the responses?

ME: Yes!

Lilac: Just need to keep opening. Need to keep up momentum.



Figure 64 Logo launch: step towards formalising the group's identity COPYRIGHT TASH



Figure 65. I'd put 50 of the posters up ahead a week of the BBQ.

25-06-16 RESIDENTS' BBQ

25-06-16 BBQ

Day of reckoning arrived! Jonathan picked me up at one and the weather was fine—joked that it was very different to the day when we did the Xmas event.

Got there, Doug turned up already. Helping us set up. I start setting up the board with bits of paper I had printed. I was pleased with end result. See photo. Set up outside, still sunny!

There are kids, and Sally, Zara, & Tom, sitting over there on the garden benches area, but not coming over.

Then a 50ish guy—proclaimed himself as a photographer of the walls—turned up early. Anyway, after some stuttered small-talk, I introduce him to Jonathan and he gets to helping out with setting up the Gazebo with Doug too. Then Tash turned up and other people—so I asked Jonathan if he'd get BBQ set up—he already had. Vague sense that more children arriving. At least 5. Martha, resident lady who's been giving us donations now, turned up with husband Clive.

Zara and Tom do come over and sit at our new picnic table. Talk to them about the work and plans (Tom's friend comes too). Raining more. Lucy turned up. They help me move the gazebo (with Jess) and then she works out a way to move the board underneath and lean it onto some chairs! I realise after a while, people are sat at tables eating food talking drinking, no one is taking any notice of the plans so I decide to go around with the post-it notes and take down feedback. Started talking to resident Pat's husband, who's looking after the naughty dog. Turns out he works on putting kitchen units at the university. We talk at length outside. I show him the plans. We go inside to talk further and he said he can see why we need to be old-y world-y and keep the aesthetics. Said we'd need a splash-back to protect the bricks.

Then I talk to Martha and Clive show them plans inside. Darren the artist pitches up with his mate. He asks question about waste flow, I can't answer and he goes outside to look at the plans.

I talk to Zara and Tom and get some feedback. They want to know when the works will start, what time of day etc. Try to count people on clicker but doesn't work—trying to count at same time is impossible. My vague impression (seeing everyone sitting on the tables and all chairs filled) is that are 20 outside and maybe a few more inside. Plus kids running around.

Frank turns up and we chat about the feedback. He mentions that the most recent plans are on the planning portal but not accessible to the public because of them being ‘pre-app’.

Winding down at 5pm. Meet a badger-haired chap, Tim, guy wanting to set up Walmgate RA—he’d seen poster in Walmgate, he lived round Huby Court way. I chat to him with Sally, who’s come round. She says “Its bloody hard work”. I say “Don’t let that put you off”—he laughs!

Then pack away—Jonathan thinks about 30 people including kids turned up. 5 people at the end with kids from Walmgate came to talk to him and he say they’d said what we were doing was fantastic and were pleased. Well done us!

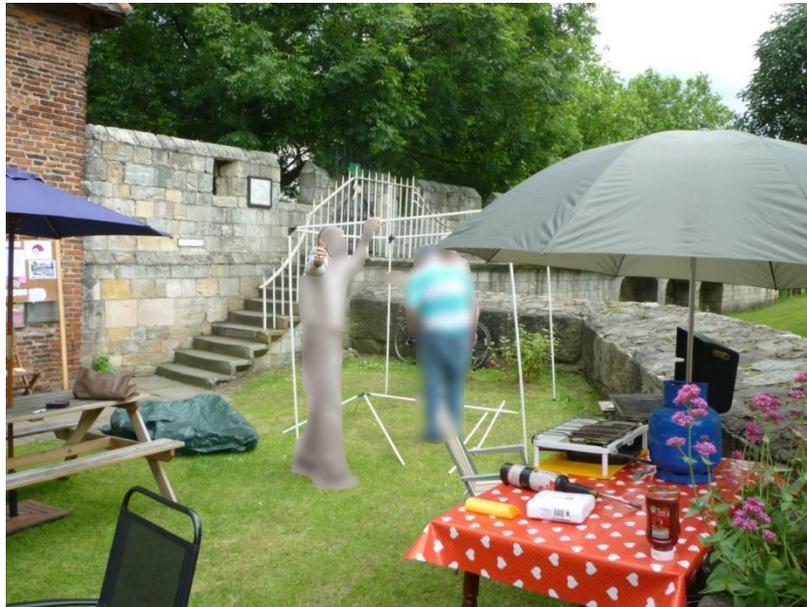


Figure 66 Doug helps Jonathan and a new volunteer erect the gazebo for the BBQ.



Figure 67. Local involvement as the project evolves © Lilac



Figure 68 Meeting Tim from up the road to discuss the new Residents' Association



Figure 69 Consultation board at Resident's BBQ.

02-07-16 Chat with Libby

At Red Tower for an event, I started talking to Libby inside (I was glad to see her, she'd gone away for a while to work with a women's charity). She gave me some feedback about community engagement (suggesting a 'mud play' day for the kids maybe). She also told me that a few residents in the area felt negatively towards the Red Tower. That there had been no plans to get them involved in the growing (although I reminded her of the posters). But she continued that when the feedback forms had gone round, they'd said that some people were asking questions about the money, where had it come from, why wasn't it better spent elsewhere? I said it came from COMA, with help from the council. She answered that might have had a negative impact on how the tower was viewed. She added, "Money made a difference but it isn't everything".

At this point Tim, who'd been at the BBQ and been listening, turned into the conversation and said "Well, it helps an awful lot!" I introduced them to each other; he saying he was interested in setting up the Walmgate Residents Association and holding it in the Red Tower. I told him about Libby's charity; she winked at me and smiled.

I left them talking to each other. I had to run off as I had arranged to get a train to visit family. So I said goodbye to Lilac, Libby, Jonathan, Kayleigh and Linda, Doug and (seen out of the corner of my eye) waved to gent dogwalker who always comes by wearing a cap. Saw also, Sally, Zara and Tom sat on their raised bed in the tarmac area. I wish I had time to go over to them to say 'go over!' but I had a train to catch.

Tim's interview (16-09-16, Local Church)

Aspirations? Well just for everybody to be engaged and happy with the community, really. So that's my aspiration, I think, yeah. Well the community association is one thing. I volunteer for right of engagement, I guess, in a word is what my volunteering and community stuff is about, really. So the Red Tower is part of that process really, engaging with groups to come along and talk about how they see the area developing.

Rarely I do the community association, there was a grant thing that I was working on for...if it comes off it'll be £2.5million and there's an area sort of...more deprived parts of the city is where the money has to be spent and it's trying to get people who are a long way off the labour market to engage and go and get jobs, basically. So those are [...] things I'm doing.

[...]

I think without it being a heritage building there's talk of other things, other possible community centres I've heard mentioned, or sites that could be used. If you had a new-build building, it wouldn't have that heritage aspect to it and I think it would make it more difficult to make it be a self-funding community centre than the Red Tower.

So I think that's its USP, if you like, in marketing-speak. It's unique selling proposition is that it is a heritage building and I think people would be more willing to get engaged with it, come along to a sort of heritage building than they would be if it was an ordinary, new-build community centre.

06-08-16 Talking with Sally

I think this is the last time I'm going write fieldnotes (I have to stop soon!)

Went to Rosemary place, beautiful sunny August day. Parked bike in Tower and went over to the garden area where I saw Sally bending over tending to the flowers. I said hi, she explained she'd

had a “fallin’ out, well not as such” with Tom (neighbour who helps with the gardening). He wanted to get Alan Titmarsh involved in “a do” at their new garden and she didn’t think it a good idea at that point. I was surprised and it was shame—“but we’re still talking” she said.

We sat down together on the wood of the edible bed and chatted. I’d asked her about the Red Tower, I stammered a bit actually, “What do you think now, a year one since our interview?”

She said, hands covering her face a bit. “Does it have to be a community hub, to get the grants and so on?”

I said I didn’t know. I said how their plans were potentially now *York wide*, and that there’d been issues with getting CIO status—so they’d changed to CIC.

She was concerned about the amount of money going to the Red Tower, “It’s scandalous”.

So we talked some more about the way the rest of the walls had been managed, how other parts would need even more funding. I explained how the council wanted to find people to take the walls into ownership. I said, after what she’d told me about the students and tourists, that the Red Tower could be giving something back to the community that felt disregarded. She said “I thought you’d think that. I hadn’t want to tell you but I don’t think it could be a community hub, maybe a place for exhibitions and a café”.

Whilst we were talking a few people were walking around the area. A tourist eating his lunch at a bench. A lady came and smoked outside her house. I said it was quiet “it’s bliss” Sally said “and the best thing to do if living in flats is to come outside.”

Then Matt turned up, saying he had a BBC 2 film crew coming over (Sally flushed up, “Not here?! We’ve already been in the paper this week for Rosie’s Garden”). Matt answered “Ok, but what is the deal was with the garden? What’s happening?” And (our lull broken) she walked with purpose over the tarmac area to show him what she was doing, pointing out the areas where things were going to be. I was told to come along and did so. She talked about her ideas for the garden area and for the kids “insect hotel over there”, “fencing over there”, pointing and gesturing across the area.

Matt then asked me to come for a coffee, and on the walk he was asking what the deal was with the Red tower—“Why hasn’t it happened yet?” “Planning takes a while”, I said. We ate

sandwiches outside Morrisons and the film crew guy turned up (BBC2 programme, on dancing resilient communities??) I was asked to open up the Red Tower so Matt could show them how far the floods had come in. I did that, then I left Matt and the crew in the Tower.

7.8 Afterword

I stopped taking fieldnotes after this moment. After I left York in early November 2016, things at the Red Tower remained in flux. Some local connections that were blossoming, didn't come to fruition for various reasons (Kayleigh and Jess had to step down from the CIC due to house moves, returning to work and family commitments). Sally voiced criticisms against the plans, particularly against the hole in the wall, which was given permission. But other connections grew: Libby started helping out in the garden again and Barney moved from London to be part of the team. A new website was created, using the logo developed by Bivouac and the York College students. For my own part, I remain optimistically cautious about the impact that the Red Tower might have on the local area, and have made my thoughts known to the Red Tower CIC team, proposing it support conversations about keeping affordable housing in the city available in the future. The ongoing developments they have undertaken since my leaving are described below by the directors of the Red Tower after November 2016, along with some of their photographs of key moments:

The project has moved on quickly since November 2016.

Having completed a feasibility study and established that the vision of utilising an historic building to serve the needs of the community, it was full steam ahead to submit a bid to secure a meaningful lease from the City of York council which would give us the building in our name over an extended period of time. This was not too difficult as we had some really helpful interaction with several council officials who were keen for us to succeed. The planning and other consents and lease were achieved.



Figure 70 Locality Conference 2016 Nov –© Tash

The decision to become a CIC was a key moment and has helped to shape our thinking as an enterprise with a purpose and a business focus as well as having social and community purposes. A team of CIC directors have met regularly in the last year and researching other similar projects and businesses / historic buildings, and asking about potential markets and pricing. We have also worked in small sub groups which has worked well and made meetings and progress easier. Red Tower York CIC is now responsible for the building and we are creating a business plan so that the enterprise can get up and running as a viable operation in Spring 2018.



Figure 71 Formation of the CIC was a real step change © Tash



Figure 72. Partnership created with Sealed Knot © Jonathan



Figure 73. Red Tower Donation Box. © Jonathan



Figure 74 Art exhibition by students: a great use of the space © Tash

We employed a reputable firm of heritage architects who recognised what we were trying to achieve, both internally and externally. Plans were submitted and we were successful in gaining approval, but only for an internal upgrade. External landscaping designs had to be withdrawn because of some opposition which would have delayed the whole project.

Having settled on final plans, after due process a construction company was selected and which is currently waiting in the wings to commence development.

The CYC agreed to be responsible for introducing utilities into the building. This process has proved to be very flawed and has caused the project to lose a little momentum as we never knew when to hold events in case the service installation might start!



Figure 75 Access for utilities inside tower. © Jonathan.



Figure 76. Gap in the wall created © Jonathan..



Figure 77. Regular pay as you feel café – August 2017 Facebook. © Lilac



Figure 78. Kenny Brown's model of upgrade. © Jonathan.

Throughout the intermittent works, we were determined to keep the tower open and do what we could in whatever way circumstances would allow to provide for the community and visitors. We have been selective as we felt that we were running events which lacked clear purpose and outcomes, and which needed better promotion. The second residents' barbecue in July 2016, continuing local community engagement, has helped to get the Walmgate Community Association (WCA) started. This was very busy, as was Heritage Open Days weekend and this was a great event to conclude the season before development work. We have local groups keen to use the building as soon as it is fully operational.



Figure 79. Heritage Open Day 2017: a fab finale before development! © Tash



Figure 80. Flourishing growing beds © Tash

We have also had time to apply for grants which has helped us build further skills and make new advocates for the Tower. In terms of finances the project has succeeded in being awarded approx. £24,000 from the Guildhall Ward budget, several grants of £17,000 and lastly getting the £50,000 Yorventure grant which means we now have the money to do the building work. The application to Yorventure for a large grant was quite onerous and time consuming, requiring input from a small team dedicated to the application process. But expected completion date for the upgrade is now Jan/Feb 2018.

END OF RED TOWER DIARIES

D.vi Theme & Case Coding Charts for Red Tower Data

Figure 81. TOP TEN Theme Coding (WORD %) from all fieldnotes across the phases

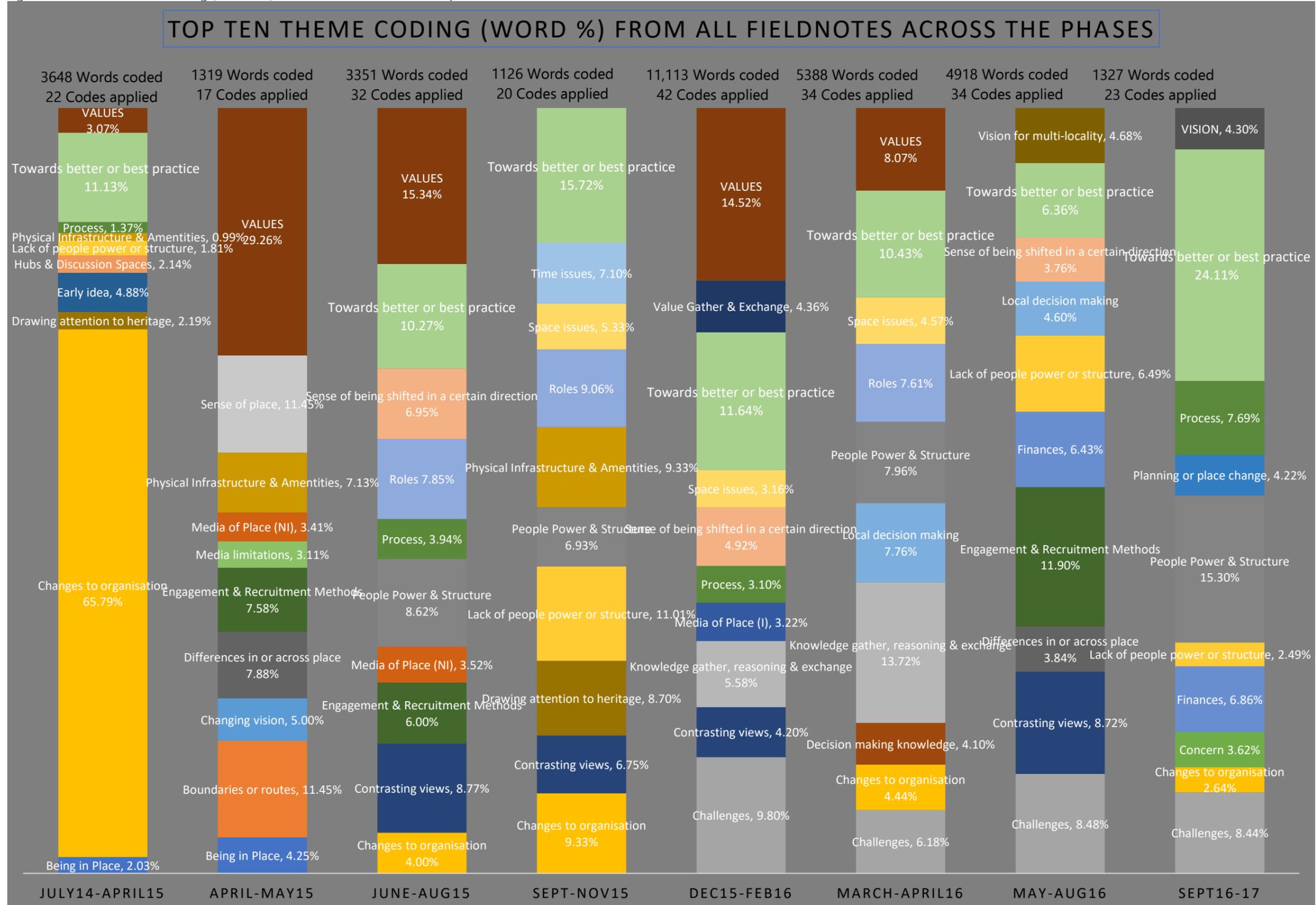


Table 9. Coding themes for all fieldnotes (fig 81)

Themes	July14- April15	April- May15	June- Aug15	Sept- Nov15	Dec15- Feb16	March- April16	May- Aug16	Sept16-17
Being in Place	2.03%	4.25%						
Boundaries or routes		11.45%						
Challenges					9.80%	6.18%	8.48%	8.44%
Changes to organisation	65.79%		4.00%	9.33%		4.44%		2.64%
Changing vision		5.00%						
Concern								3.62%
Contrasting views			8.77%	6.75%	4.20%		8.72%	
Decision making knowledge						4.10%		
Differences in or across place		7.88%					3.84%	
Drawing attention to heritage	2.19%			8.70%				
Early idea	4.88%							
Engagement & Recruitment Methods		7.58%	6.00%				11.90%	
Finances							6.43%	6.86%
Hubs & Discussion Spaces	2.14%							
Knowledge gather, reasoning & exchange					5.58%	13.72%		
Lack of people power or structure	1.81%			11.01%			6.49%	2.49%
Local decision making						7.76%	4.60%	
Media limitations		3.11%						
Media of Place (I)					3.22%			
Media of Place (NI)		3.41%	3.52%					
People Power & Structure			8.62%	6.93%		7.96%		15.30%
Physical Infrastructure & Amentities	0.99%	7.13%		9.33%				
Planning or place change								4.22%
Process	1.37%		3.94%		3.10%			7.69%
Roles			7.85%	9.06%		7.61%		
Sense of being shifted in a certain direction			6.95%		4.92%		3.76%	
Sense of place		11.45%						
Space issues				5.33%	3.16%	4.57%		
Time issues				7.10%				
Towards better or best practice	11.13%		10.27%	15.72%	11.64%	10.43%	6.36%	24.11%
Value Gather & Exchange					4.36%			
VALUES	3.07%	29.26%	15.34%		14.52%	8.07%		
VISION								4.30%
Vision for multi-locality							4.68%	
TOTAL WORDS CODED	3648	1319	3351	1126	11113	5388	4918	1327

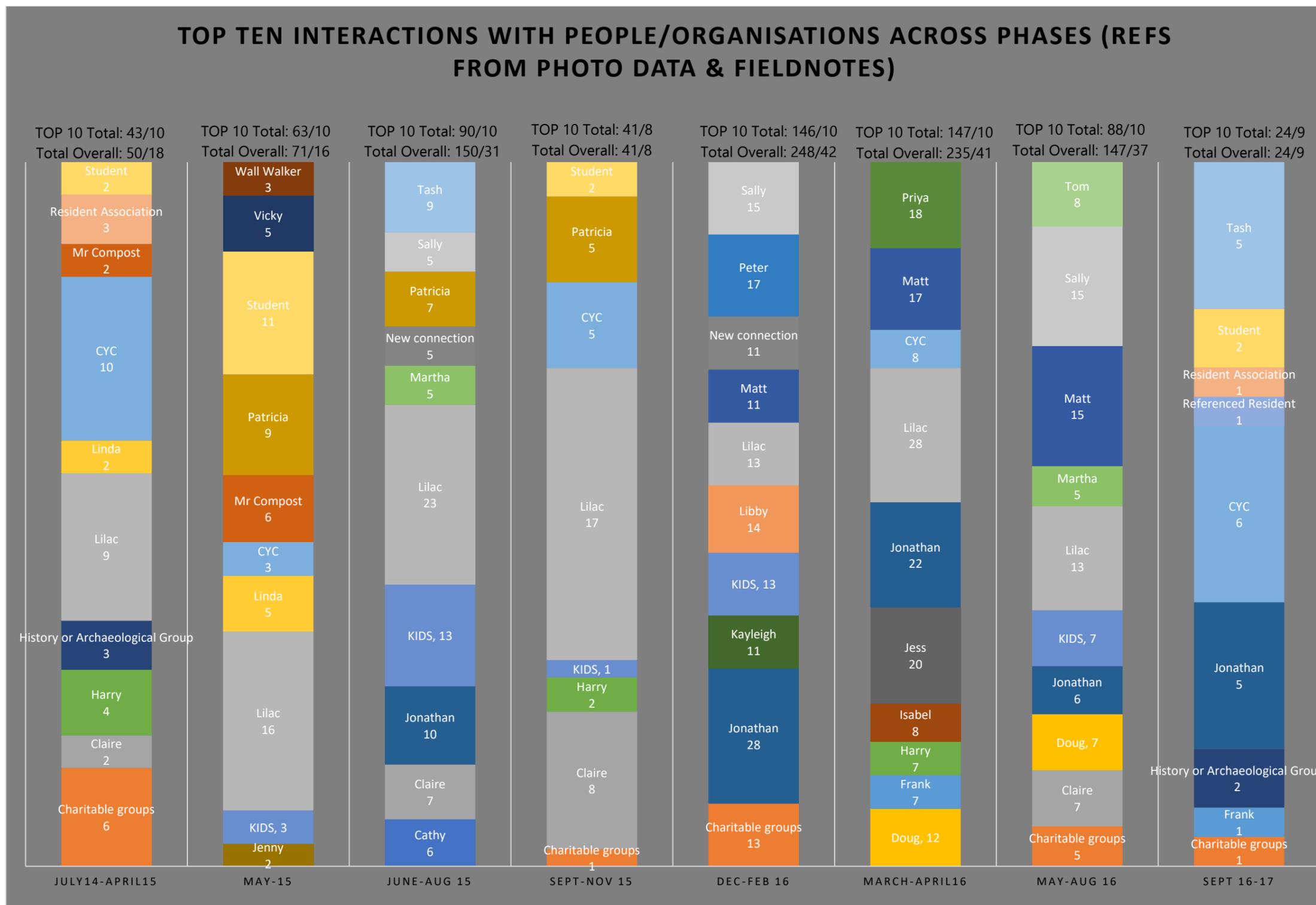


Figure 82. TOP ten interactions with people & organisations across phases

Table 10. Interactions with people/organisations (case coding) (for fig 82)

People/organisations	July2014- April15	April-May15	June-Aug 15	Sept-Nov15	Dec15-Feb16	March- April16	May-Aug16	Sept16-17
Barny						3	2	
Cathy			6		6			
Charitable groups	6	1	4	1	13	2	5	1
Church					1	2		
Claire	2	1	7	8	2	5	4	
Clive							4	
Community worker						2		
Craig			1			6		
Cynthia							2	
Darren							2	
Developer					1			
Doug					4	12	7	
Ed			2			4	4	
Education					1	6		
Frank	1				8	7	2	1
Gabbi-Morrisons					6		1	
Harry	4		1	2	1	7		
Heather			2		1	2		
Heritage Asset Projects	1				2			
Heritage Organisations	1	1	1		1	1		
Heritage practitioner						1		
History or Archaeological Group	3	1	1		4	3		2
Ian			1					
Isabel			1			8		
Jenny	1	2	1		2	5		
Jess					4	20	4	1
Jonathan			10		28	22	6	5
Julie					7			
Kayleigh					11	5	3	1
KIDS		3	13	1	13	2	7	
Libby			4		14	1	4	1
Lilac	9	16	23	17	13	28	13	1
Linda	2	5	2		9	2	3	
Local Authority	10	3	2	5	10	8	3	6
Local councillor					3		1	
Local service					1	1		
Lucy					2		1	
Martha			5		1	1	5	

Matt					11	17	15	
Mike	1		1					
Mr Compost		3	2		4	7	1	
New volunteer connection or helper	1		5		11	1	3	
Pat					2		1	
Patricia	1	9	7	5				
Peter					17	2		
Priya						18		
Referenced Community or group					1		1	
Referenced CYC practitioner					1			
Referenced Resident		1	1		1	1	1	1
Residential Association	3		3			4	2	1
Sally			5		15	1	15	1
Sarah						2	1	
Sean						1		
Student	2	11	2	2	4	6	2	2
Tash			9		2	4	3	5
Tim							3	1
Tom					2		8	
Vicky	1	5	1					
Wall Walker		3	2		6	4	2	
York St John University	1					1	1	
Zara					2		5	

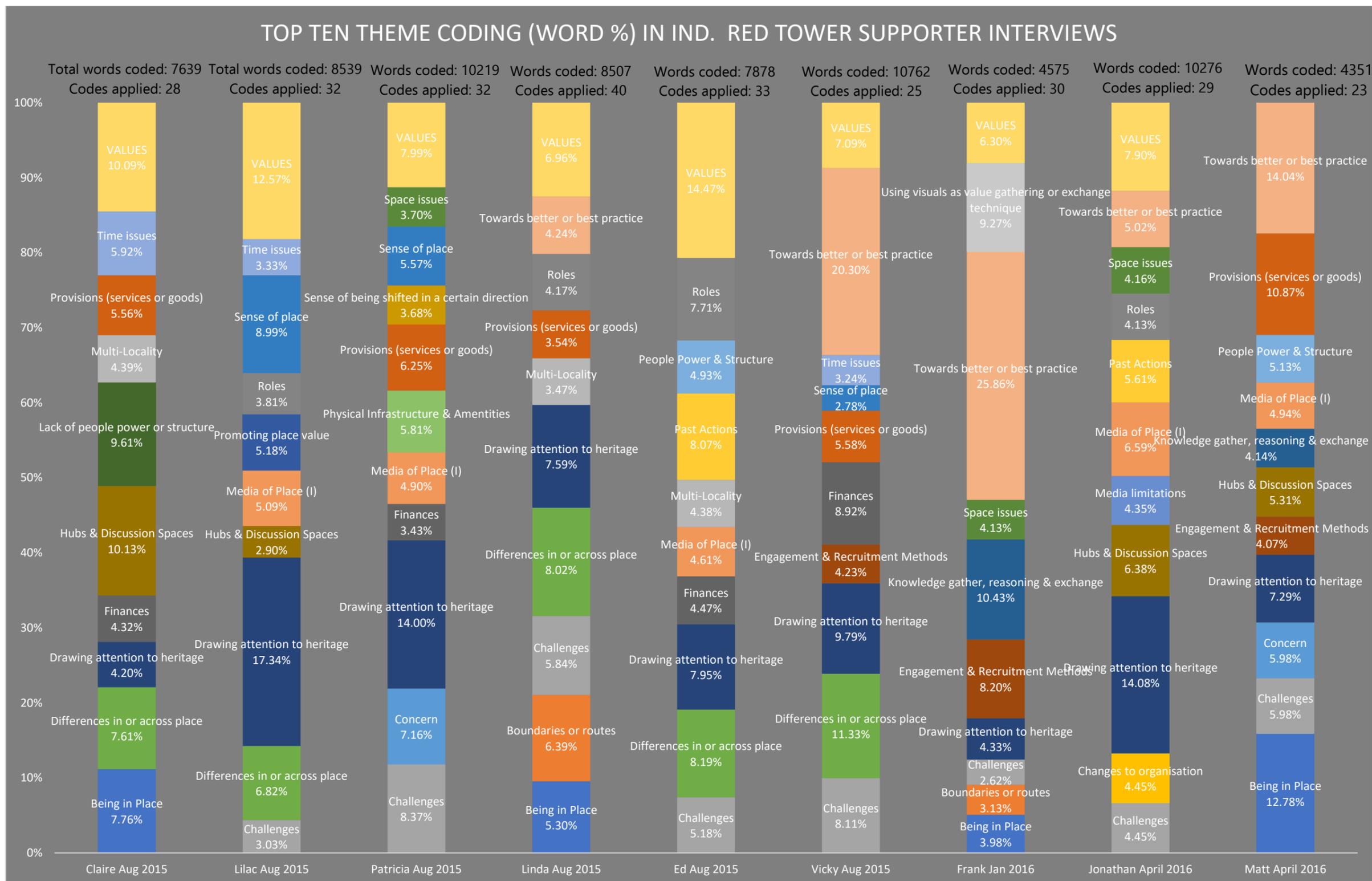


Figure 83. Top Ten Theme Coding in Red Tower Supporter Interviews

Table 11. Coding themes for all Red Tower Supporter Interviews (for fig 83).

Themes	Claire Aug 2015	Lilac Aug 2015	Patricia Aug 2015	Linda Aug 2015	Ed Aug 2015	Vicky Aug 2015	Frank Jan 2016	Jonathan April 2016	Matt April 2016
Being in Place	7.76%			5.30%			3.98%		12.78%
Boundaries or routes				6.39%			3.13%		
Challenges		3.03%	8.37%	5.84%	5.18%	8.11%	2.62%	4.45%	5.98%
Changes to organisation								4.45%	
Concern			7.16%						5.98%
Differences in or across place	7.61%	6.82%		8.02%	8.19%	11.33%			
Drawing attention to heritage	4.20%	17.34%	14.00%	7.59%	7.95%	9.79%	4.33%	14.08%	7.29%
Engagement & Recruitment Methods						4.23%	8.20%		4.07%
Finances	4.32%		3.43%		4.47%	8.92%			
Hubs & Discussion Spaces	10.13%	2.90%						6.38%	5.31%
Knowledge gather, reasoning & exchange							10.43%		4.14%
Lack of people power or structure	9.61%								
Media limitations								4.35%	
Media of Place (I)		5.09%	4.90%		4.61%			6.59%	4.94%
Multi-Locality	4.39%			3.47%	4.38%				
Past Actions					8.07%			5.61%	
People Power & Structure					4.93%				5.13%
Physical Infrastructure & Amentities			5.81%						
Promoting place value		5.18%							
Provisions (services or goods)	5.56%		6.25%	3.54%		5.58%			10.87%
Roles		3.81%		4.17%	7.71%			4.13%	
Sense of being shifted in a certain direction			3.68%						
Sense of place		8.99%	5.57%			2.78%			
Space issues			3.70%				4.13%	4.16%	
Time issues	5.92%	3.33%				3.24%			
Towards better or best practice				4.24%		20.30%	25.86%	5.02%	14.04%
Using visuals as value gathering or exchange technique							9.27%		
VALUES	10.09%	12.57%	7.99%	6.96%	14.47%	7.09%	6.30%	7.90%	
TOTAL WORDS CODED	7639	8539	10219	8507	7878	10762	4575	10276	4351

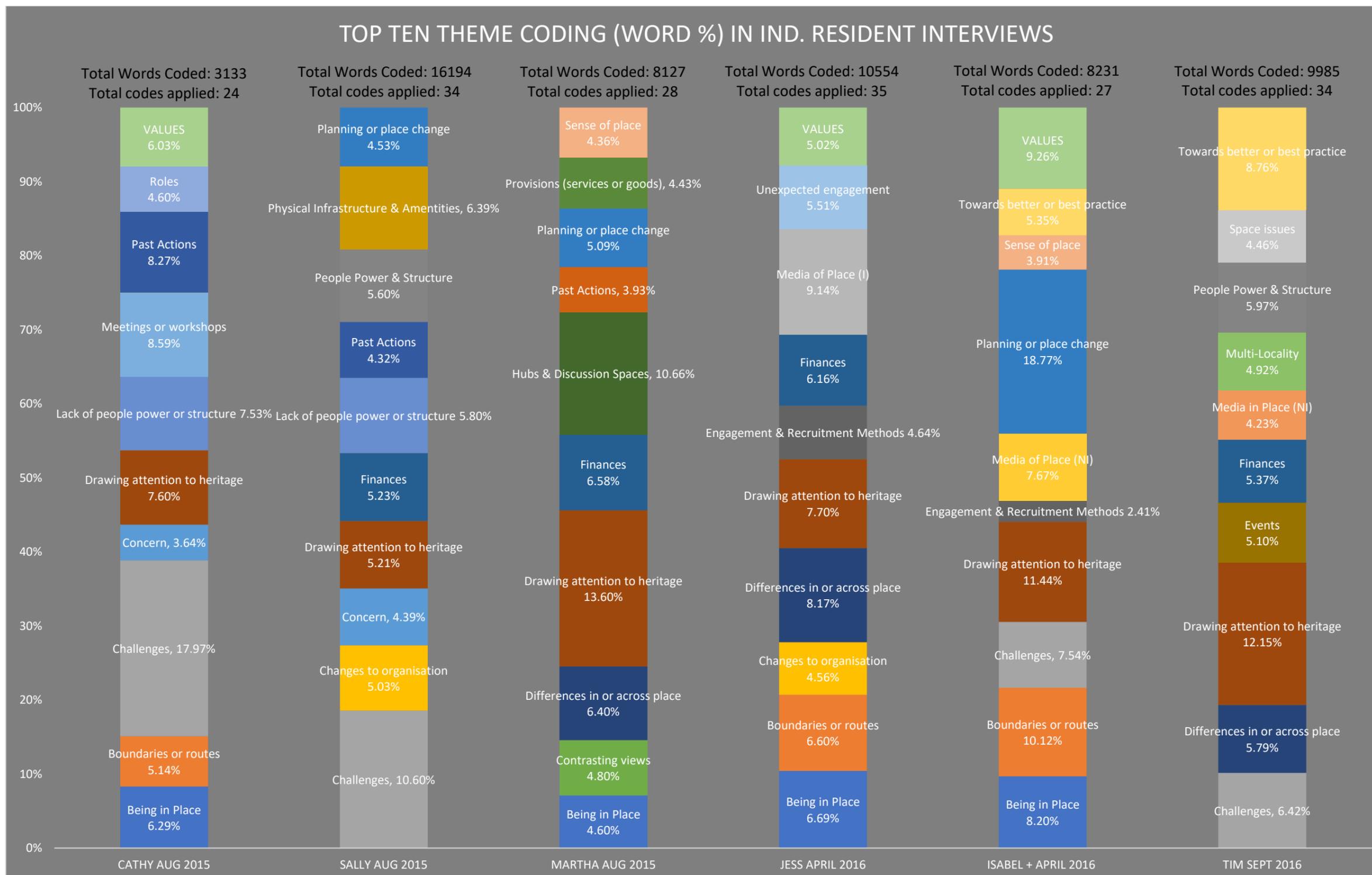


Figure 84. Top Ten Themes Coding in Resident Interviews

Table 12. Coding themes for all Residents Interviews (for fig 84).

THEME	CATHY AUG 2015	SALLY AUG 2015	MARTHA AUG 2015	JESS APRIL 2016	ISABEL + APRIL 2016	TIM SEPT 2016
Being in Place	6.29%		4.60%	6.69%	8.20%	
Boundaries or routes	5.14%			6.60%	10.12%	
Challenges	17.97%	10.60%			7.54%	6.42%
Changes to organisation		5.03%		4.56%		
Concern	3.64%	4.39%				
Contrasting views			4.80%			
Differences in or across place			6.40%	8.17%		5.79%
Drawing attention to heritage	7.60%	5.21%	13.60%	7.70%	11.44%	12.15%
Engagement & Recruitment Methods				4.64%	2.41%	
Events						5.10%
Finances		5.23%	6.58%	6.16%		5.37%
Hubs & Discussion Spaces			10.66%			
Lack of people power or structure	7.53%	5.80%				
Media in Place (NI)						4.23%
Media of Place (I)				9.14%		
Media of Place (NI)					7.67%	
Meetings or workshops	8.59%					
Multi-Locality						4.92%
Past Actions	8.27%	4.32%				
Past Actions			3.93%			
People Power & Structure		5.60%				5.97%
Physical Infrastructure & Amentities		6.39%				
Planning or place change		4.53%	5.09%		18.77%	
Provisions (services or goods)			4.43%			
Roles	4.60%					
Sense of place			4.36%		3.91%	
Space issues						4.46%
Towards better or best practice					5.35%	8.76%
Unexpected engagement				5.51%		
VALUES	6.03%			5.02%	9.26%	
TOTAL WORDS CODED	3133	16194	8127	10554	8231	9985

Table 13. Theme coding for Red Tower Supporter Group Interview

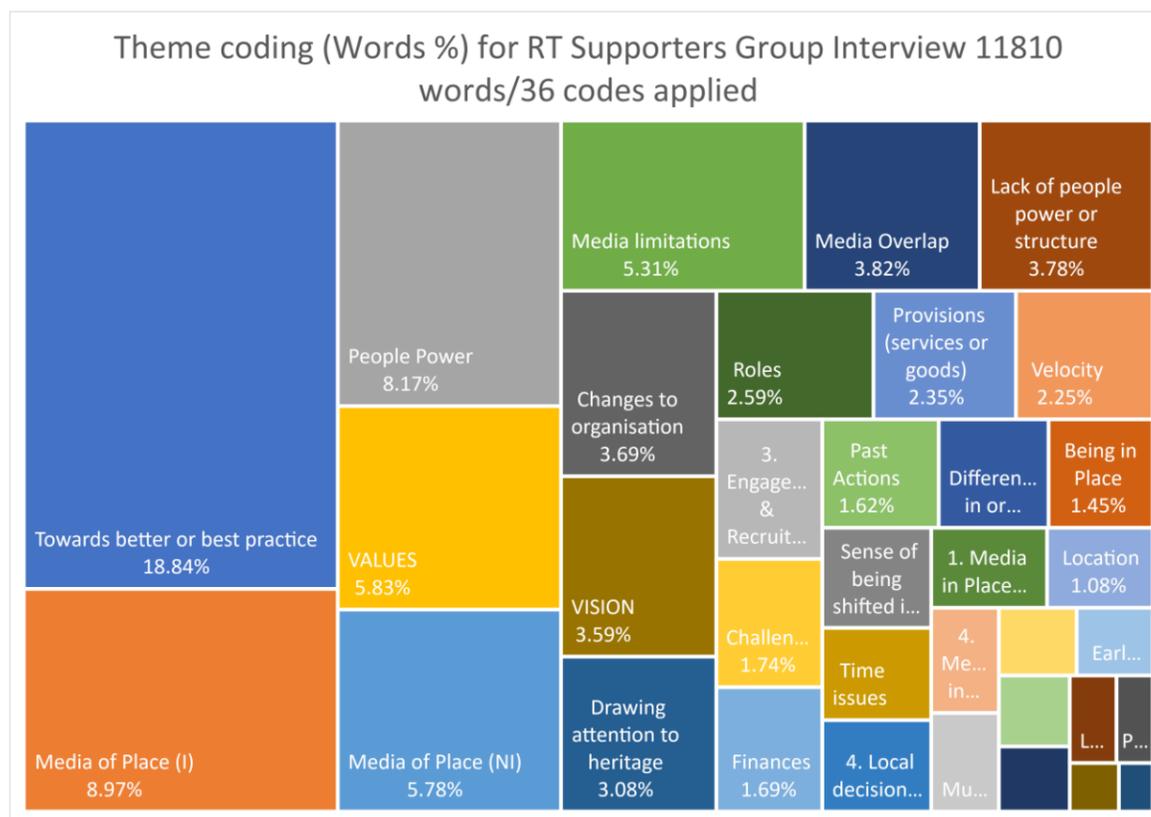


Figure 85. Theme coding for Red Tower Supporter Group Interview

THEME	H : 26-08-15 Phoenix GRP Lilic, Vicky & Ed	
Towards better or best practice	2225	18.84%
Media of Place (I)	1059	8.97%
People Power	965	8.17%
VALUES	689	5.83%
Media of Place (NI)	683	5.78%
Media limitations	627	5.31%
Media Overlap	451	3.82%
Lack of people power or structure	446	3.78%
Changes to organisation	436	3.69%
VISION	424	3.59%
Drawing attention to heritage	364	3.08%
Roles	306	2.59%
Provisions (services or goods)	277	2.35%
Velocity	266	2.25%
3. Engagement & Recruitment Methods	224	1.90%
Challenges	206	1.74%
Finances	200	1.69%
Past Actions	191	1.62%
Differences in or across place	180	1.52%
Being in Place	171	1.45%
Sense of being shifted in a certain direction	165	1.40%
Time issues	152	1.29%
4. Local decision making or responsibility (devolution)	151	1.28%
1. Media in Place (NI)	140	1.19%
Location	128	1.08%
4. Media in Place (I)	108	0.91%
Multi-Locality	101	0.86%
Email communication	80	0.68%
Early idea	78	0.66%
Space issues	76	0.64%
Meetings or workshops	70	0.59%
Lack of engagement	62	0.52%
Planning or place change	48	0.41%
Events	36	0.30%
Physical Infrastructure & Amenities	25	0.21%
TOTAL	11810	

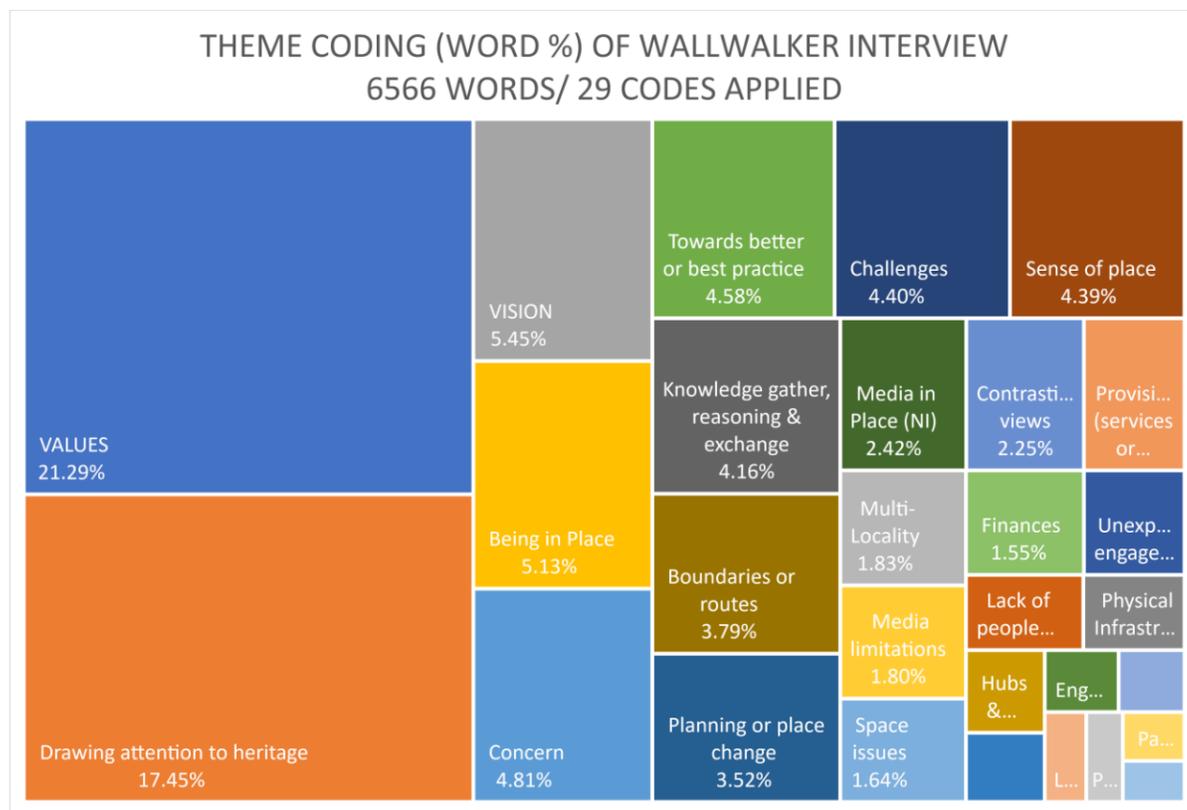


Figure 86. Theme coding for Wallwalker Group Interview

Table 14. Theme coding for Wallwalker Group Interview

THEME	A : 15-08-15 Red Tower Wallwalkers Group	%
VALUES	1398	21.29%
Drawing attention to heritage	1146	17.45%
VISION	358	5.45%
Being in Place	337	5.13%
Concern	316	4.81%
Towards better or best practice	301	4.58%
Challenges	289	4.40%
Sense of place	288	4.39%
Knowledge gather, reasoning & exchange	273	4.16%
Boundaries or routes	249	3.79%
Planning or place change	231	3.52%
Media in Place (NI)	159	2.42%
Contrasting views	148	2.25%
Provisions (services or goods)	127	1.93%
Multi-Locality	120	1.83%
Media limitations	118	1.80%
Space issues	108	1.64%
Finances	102	1.55%
Unexpected engagement	87	1.33%
Lack of people power or structure	73	1.11%
Physical Infrastructure & Amentities	63	0.96%
Hubs & Discussion Spaces	54	0.82%
Differences in or across place	45	0.69%
Engagement & Recruitment Methods	38	0.58%
Media of Place (NI)	34	0.52%
Lack of engagement	31	0.47%
Policy-Legal act or other paperwork	27	0.41%
Past Actions	25	0.38%
Email communication	21	0.32%
TOTAL WORDS CODED	6566	

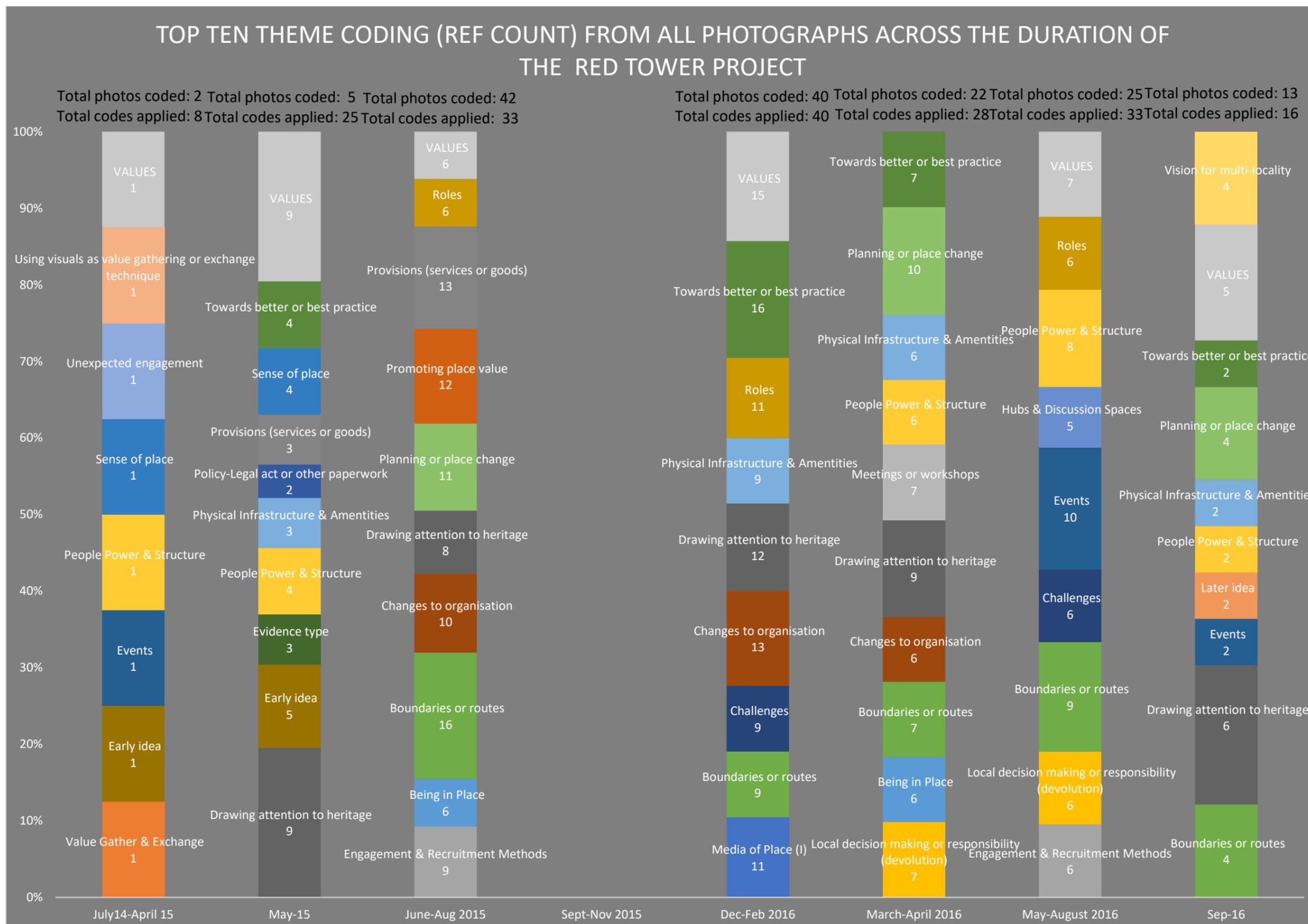


Figure 87. TOP TEN Theme Coding from all Photographs Across Phases

D.vii Consultation Report

Red Tower Consultation Report

Introduction:

The following report is part of the prefeasibility research by The Incredible Movement. It:

1. Gives an overview of the methods used to gain feedback about the preferred use of the Red Tower from different groups, starting Jan 2015.
2. Offers a summary on how feedback could be incorporated into the architectural and interior designs.
3. Presents all supporting feedback as visualised data.

1. METHODS OF CONSULTATION:

Between Jan-May 2015:

Feedback on the preferred use of the Red Tower was collected during Jan 2015's Open Resident weekend. This involved the use of post-its and postcards which were collected from visitors to the Red Tower (fig. 1-3). Four options for use were given (Community Kitchen, Café, Growing Space, Other). The postcard and post-it feedback method was chosen as a visually stimulating and inclusive way of collecting ideas.



The Red Tower Project

TIM is rethinking the Red Tower, and would love your views.

What do you think?

Community kitchen

Café

Growing Space

Other _____

Image by Holland Brown Architects

TIM in York
Co 51 Orchard Way
York
YO24 2NY

If you want us to contact you, please give us your email:



Image by Kat Foxton of Jan 2015:

Figure 88. Postcard and post-it feedback collection method

The method of consultation was adapted on March 29th 2015. TIM volunteers targeted shoppers in Homebase during an event at the Red Tower. Between 11am-1pm, shoppers

were approached and asked what their preferred use of the building was (using the same options as above). But this time their answers were taken down on post-it notes. This method was deemed useful because it was fast and suited the transient pace of customers within the commercial environment. However, on reflection (considering some of the feedback responses), this potentially detracted the credibility of the consultation.

Between April and May 2015, an additional feedback period was undertaken over 2 weeks in a collaboration between TIM volunteers and 17 students from York St John University. Businesses in Walmgate, the students in the flats on Navigation Road and local residents were targeted. They were asked for feedback by students stationed or walking in particular areas near Red Tower.

Postcards were used at this time as a way of collecting feedback to foster more accountability to the process. However some students made notes on paper during additional conversations. Any comments from these conversation were later written down on post-its.

It was during this time that access issues became apparent in the residential areas. The students could not access the residential flats after 12noon (and their specific volunteering slot was between 2-4pm). Nor was it possible to gain entry to the student accommodation (this was later rectified). Other than direct access into businesses and student buildings, most consultation occurred with passers-by.

Between Nov 2015-March 2016:

During the feasibility program an alternative strategy was approached due to the need to gain feedback from more specific groups. These were:

Residents, Businesses, Schools & Local Organisations. Other groups were identified during this process. The methods applied were twofold:

Step One involved seeking feedback through meetings with the above groups (either by chance meeting, through organised targeting or through 'snowball'/follow up inquiries). The interests, priorities and other information of the contacts were captured in qualitative form and entered into a spreadsheet¹. Through this process, key contacts were established and were invited to the Red Tower workshop on 19th March.

In addition, due to the flooding, feedback was taken at the Red Tower (whilst it was being used a flood relief bank). A simple form was used to collect feedback, with 12 residents responding (see appendix one). All comments were also incorporated into the spreadsheet.

Step Two involved designing a 'feedback form' (see appendix two). The purpose of this feedback form was

- to enable multiple questions to be asked,
- for potentially interested people to get involved in the project and
- for their frequency of use of the Red Tower to be declared.

Moreover, these forms were integrally aimed at targeting resident and the hard to access groups. Forms could be put through letter-box delivery and picked up later. The researcher accessed 14 blocks of flats through using the tradesman's buzzer between

¹ The spreadsheet and results from the feedback forms will not be given in this report to protect personal details.

9am-12pm. She door-knocked, chatted to the residents and/or placed the form through the letter box with instructions as to when she could pick up the form. This took place over the course of a week in February in the company of other volunteers. A research information sheet was given so as to gain informed consent (appendix 3). In addition, notifications of the Red Tower workshop was also given, along with times when the Red Tower would be open and the researcher would be there talk further (appendix 4). Two residents turned up at these times to discuss the project.

It must be noted also that the flooding of the Navigation Road area will have affected the response rate of the residents.

The feedback forms were also used in talking to visitors at the Tower during the most recent Residents' Weekend (Jan 2016). On some occasions it was useful to use the feedback forms when talking to businesses. In total 140 feedback forms were handed out, 35 have been returned (25% response rate).

1. SUMMARY OF FINDINGS:

From the feedback consultations between Jan-May 2015, café was the most popular choice of function (see Charts 1-4).

During the prefeasibility consultations between November 2015 and March 2016, cafe AND community meeting place are the most common choice of function for the building out of all choices (Chart 7 & 9). Key changes over consultation periods may be due to addressing different audiences in York in more formal ways (using a feedback form), rather than passers-by. It may also be due to the impact of the floods. Furthermore, Question 5 on the feedback form gives more choices and makes a distinction between kitchen and community meeting space. Asking these different questions in different contexts this will have altered the insight into public opinion.

'Multi' & 'other use' has been overall the highest chosen function throughout both consultation periods regardless of context. Further qualitative data from the consultations suggests that business venue function may be economically sustainable and arguably can provide the valued 'elasticity' of multi/other-use.

Considering how to achieve spatial flexibility between café, meeting space and business venue will be vital to interior designing.

The last and most important note should be made with regards to the involvement of different contacts who came forward to become involved with the project during the consultation periods outlined above. As a result of this, those forming the Tower's CIO consists of members from almost each of the identified user groups (including the residents). It must be noted that further consultations can and must take place and this is by no means the last word on the Red Tower's engagement with York's community (see Heritage Interpretation Plan).

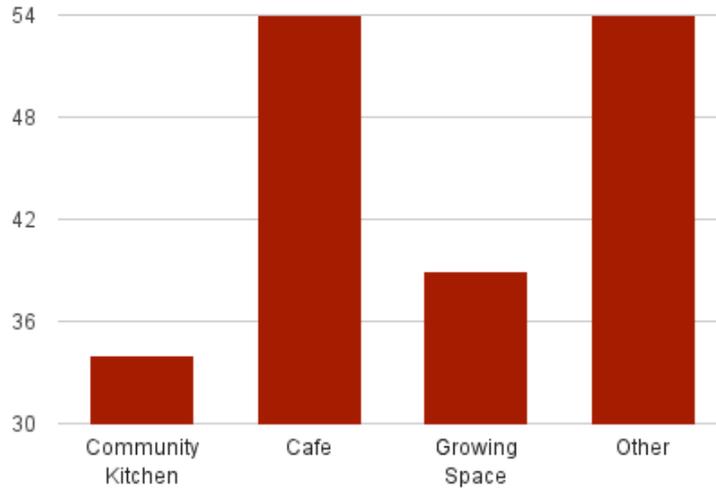
2. FINDINGS:

Jan-May 2015 Consultation results:

Open Resident Weekend 2015—157 respondents/635 visitors over 31st Jan 1st February filled out *either* a postcard *or* a post-it note (24% response rate)

Chart 1. Consultation feedback from Open Residents Weekend 2015

POSTCARDS (TOTAL = 96 respondents.) Multiple answers given per person.



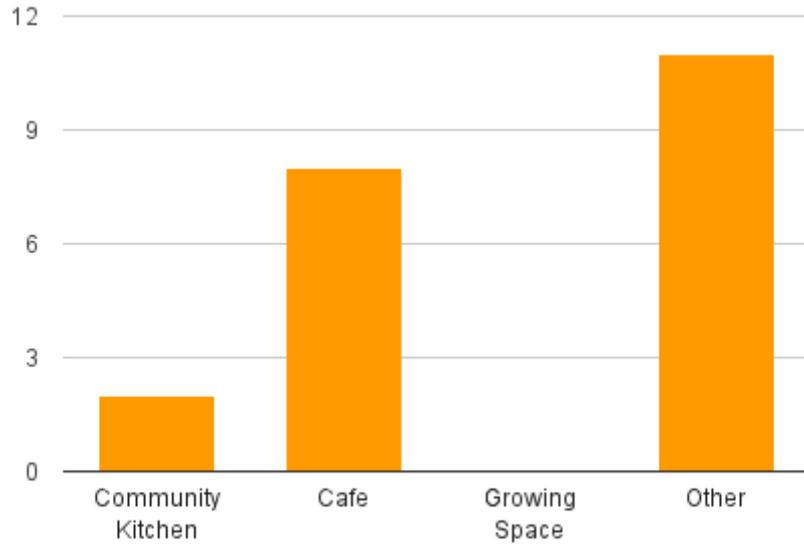
Word Cloud 1: Consultation feedback from Open Residents Weekend 2015 POSTCARDS--visitor comments that fitted in the 'Other' category (TOTAL = 436 words from 54 commentators)



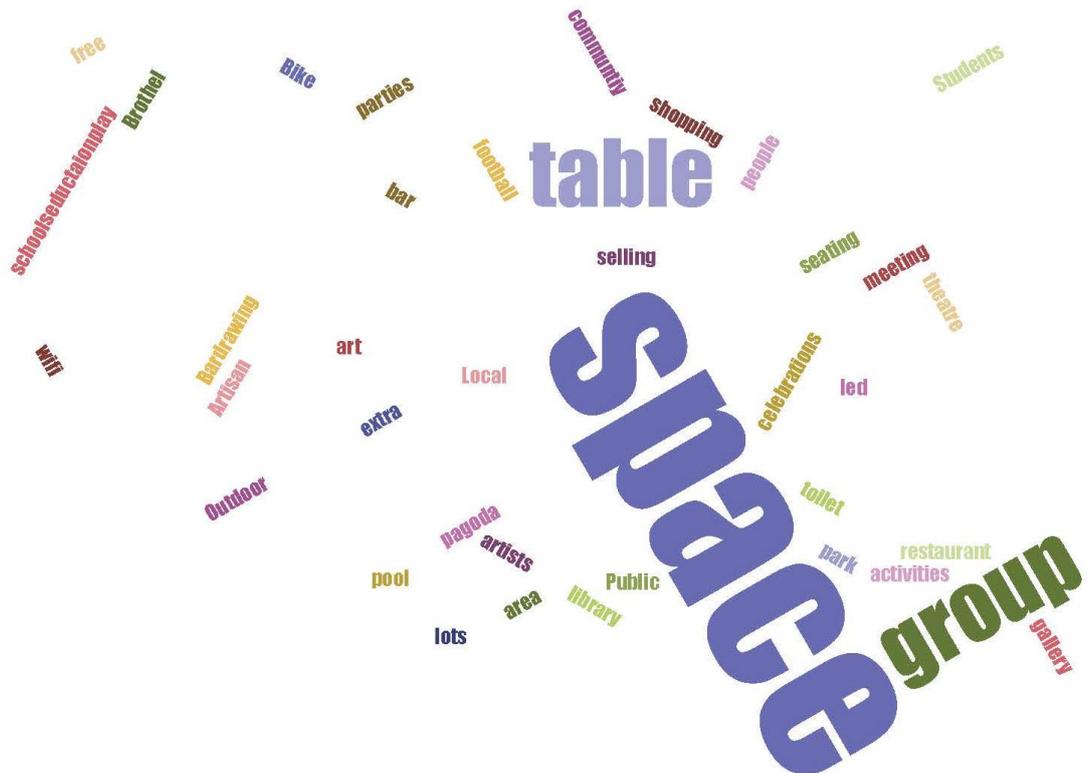
3 Highest Mode words: community, space, café.

(A note on wordcloud use: to be used cautiously! <http://www.niemanlab.org/2011/10/word-clouds-considered-harmful/>).

Chart 3. Consultation feedback from March 29th Event (Targeting shoppers in Homebase) POST-ITS ONLY (TOTAL=17 respondents) Multiple answers given.



Word Cloud 3. Consultation feedback from March 29th Event. POST-ITS Answers that fitted 'Other category' (TOTAL= 53 words from 17 commentators).



3 Highest Mode words: Space, table, group.

Chart 4. Consultation feedback from St John Students Engagement period April-May 2015. POSTCARDS (TOTAL= 8 respondents) Multiple answers given.

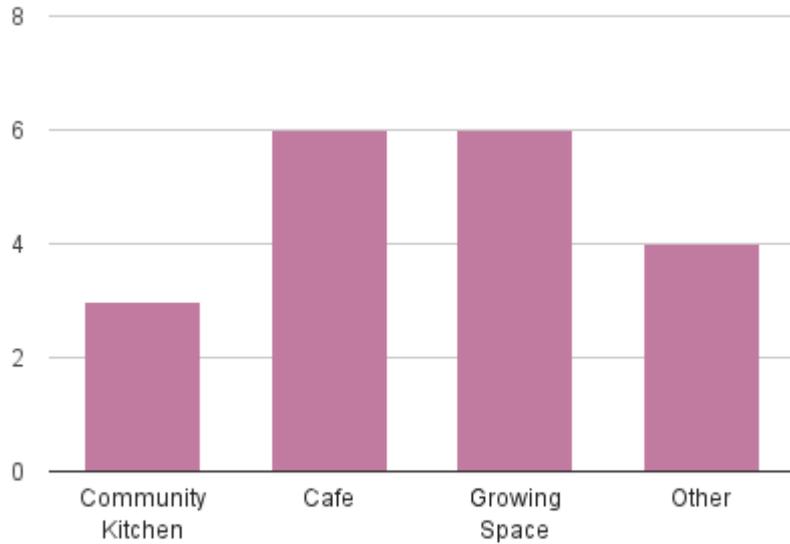


Table 1. Consultation feedback from St John Engagement period April-May 2015: POSTCARDS answers that fitted 'other' category (Total= 4/8 commentators)

yoga room
Community space for group meetings
arts and crafts room
Dungeon

Chart 5. Consultation feedback from St John Students Engagement period April-May 2015. POST-ITS (TOTAL=10 respondents) Multiple answers given

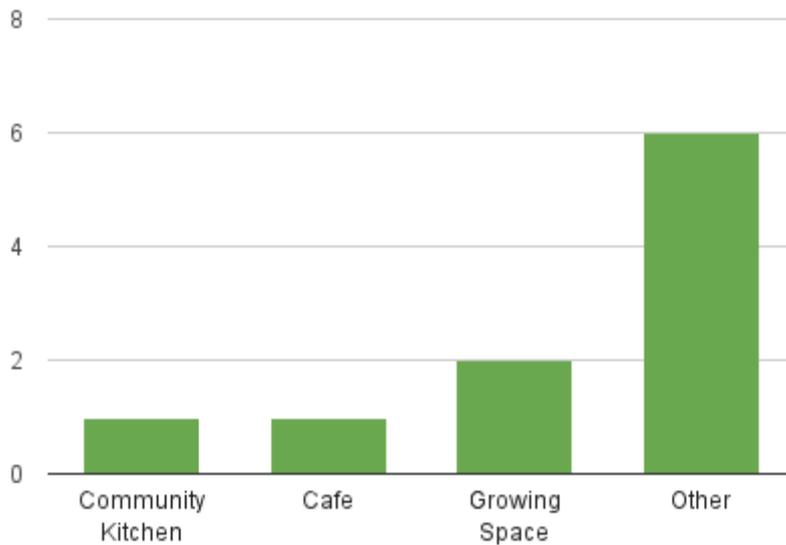
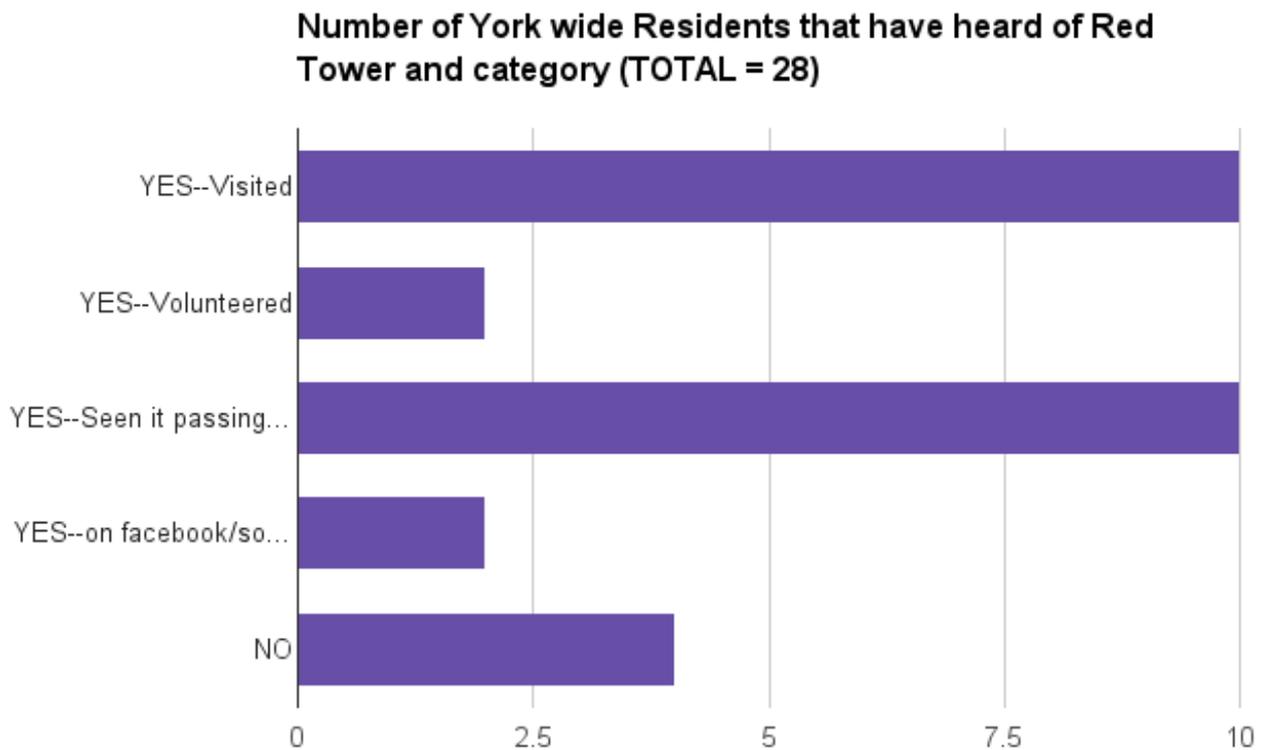


Table 2. Consultation feedback from St John Engagement period April-May 2015: POST-ITS answers that fitted other category (Total= 5/10 commentators)

any community space would be useful
would love to eat in such a gorgeous venue
community kitchen for the homeless
space for craft events workshops
a community space for games/football basketball

November 2015-March 2016 Consultation results:
STEP ONE

Chart 6. Feedback Form answers: Question 2:



(*York Wide Residents=including Navigation Road Letter-Box drop and Open Residents Weekend)

Chart 7. Feedback Form York Wide Residents

Question 3: In terms of local services do you think this area needs anything? (TOTAL = 28 respondents) Multiple answers given.

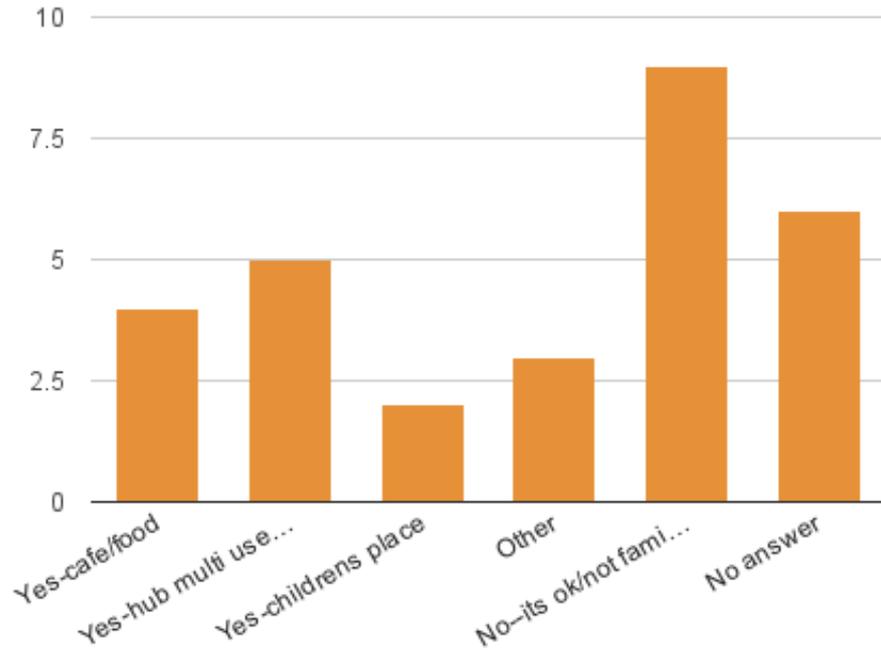
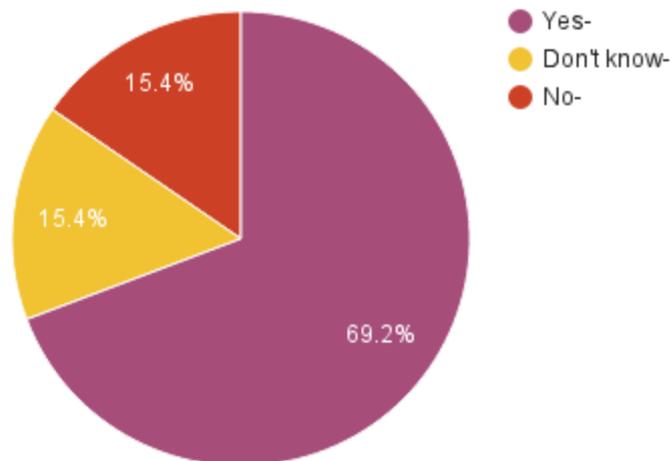


Chart 8. Feedback form answers York Wide Residents (TOTAL = 13 respondents) Question 4: DO you think the Red Tower should be restored to meet local needs?



NOTE a): Only 13 residents answered Question 4 due to the question not being asked in an earlier version of the feedback form. It was deemed worthwhile to add the question during consultation so that the fundamental purpose of the RT project could be placed in

a critical light. NOTE b): 1 out of the 2 'No' answers, responds in the next question that the RT should be used as a community meeting space, so the question may be unclear.

Chart 9: Feedback form answers York Wide residents (TOTAL=28 respondents) Question 5 If the Red Tower were to be restored it should be a:

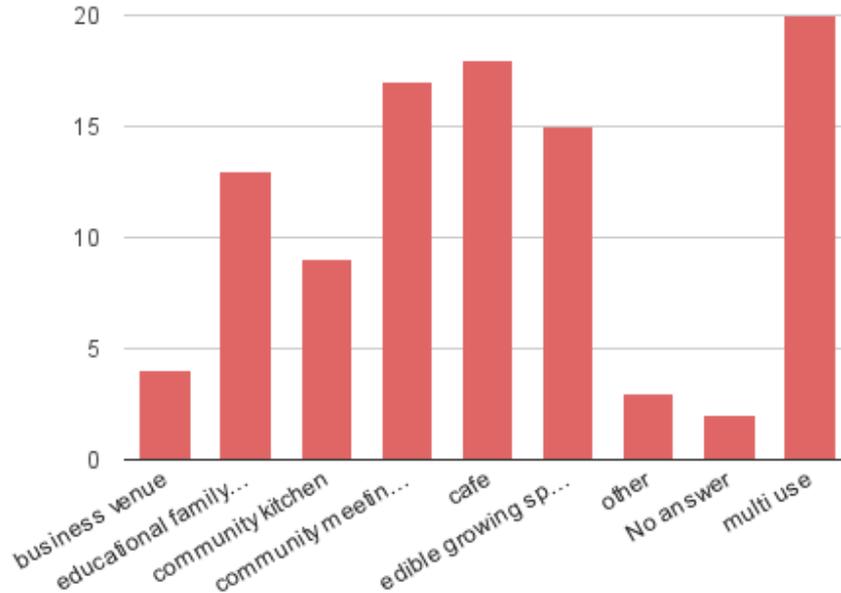


Chart 10: Feedback form answers York wide residents. Question 7:

If the Red Tower were to be restored would you be interested in being involved as a volunteer/ partner? (TOTAL = 28)

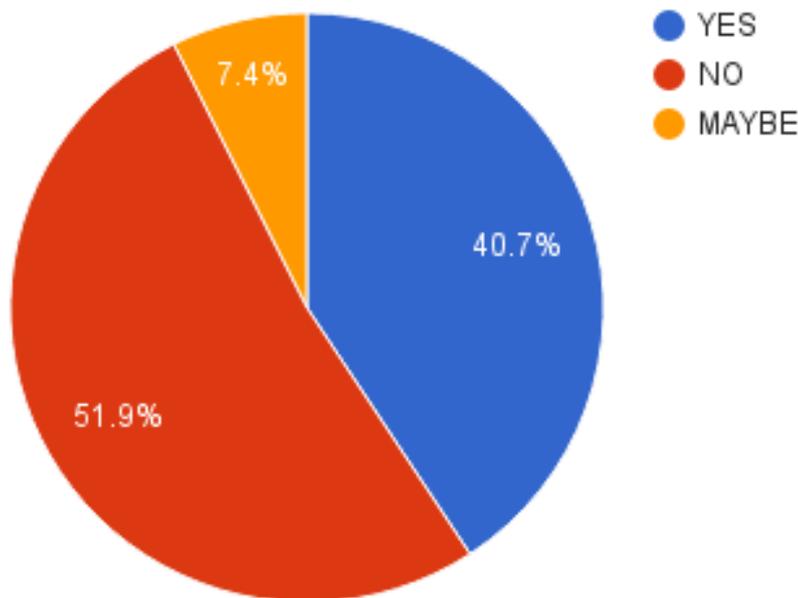


Chart 12. Feedback form answers York Wide residents Question 10: Please give your postcode or location:

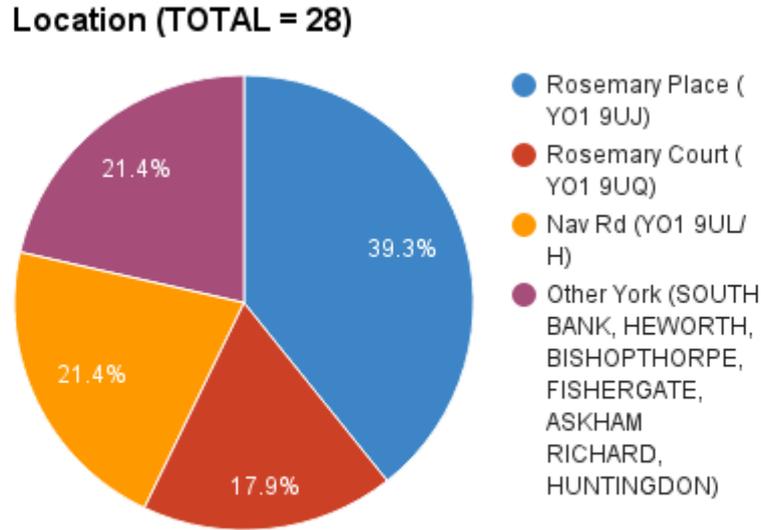
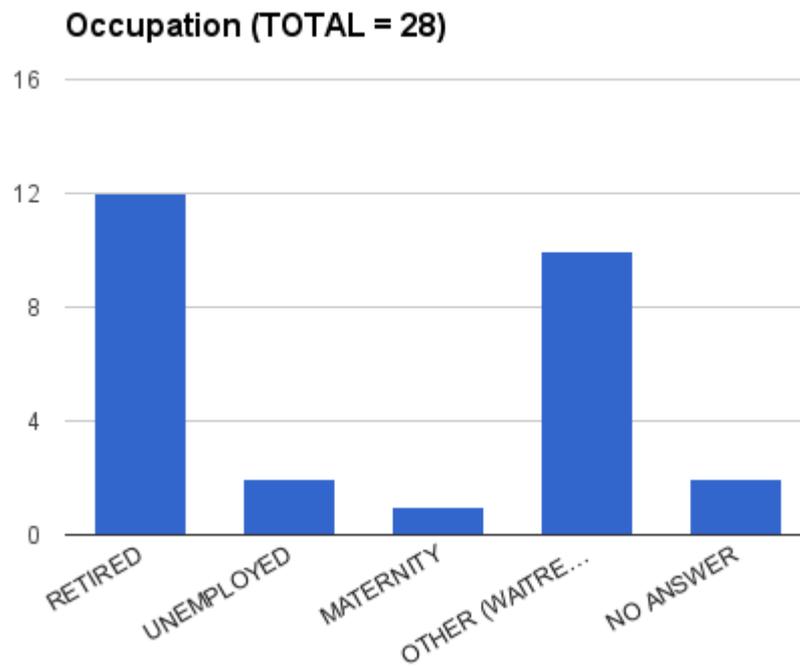


Chart 13: Feedback form answers York Wide residents Question 11: Please state your occupation:



Step two—the following consists of detailed comments from qualitative feedback gained from targeting different users, chance meetings and from extensive onsite experience. The results of this feedback have been categorised first into the different use functions as put forward in Chart 7/Question 5 (café, growing space etc.). Then they have been categorised into different identified user groups within a table.

CAFE: 2 key organisations have been approached for feedback in line with TIM's sustainable ethos (Your Café and Food Not Bombs). These 2 key organisations have not committed to establishing themselves permanently within the plans--currently they are considering use in a temporary 'pop-up' basis. These relationships need to be further sustained or alternative plans brought forward.

Another suggestion is the consideration of simple/basic refreshments being available to visitors or local people (like a tuck box), making use of kitchen facilities (see below COMMUNITY KITCHEN).

There have been some questions raised concerning the success of RT cafe in competition with other nearby cafes. A distinction from the proximate business environment can be achieved if TIM's ethos is fully manifested (as has already been proposed).

Furthermore, the privacy of the nearby flats may be impacted if a cafe were an everyday 9-5 venture and outside. This is highlighted by the fact that residents of 7-17 Rosemary Place petitioned for the current fencing to increase privacy some years ago. Ongoing awareness of the sharing of public space should be considered in the future plans (particularly to the use of the outside area).

COMMUNITY MEETING PLACE: In terms of design, most people are concerned first and foremost with the installation of amenities—toilets, electricity etc. It seems this needs to be realised first before people can imagine using it. The installation of amenities has highlighted some concerns about damage to the fabric of the building.

Another consideration has been the 'intimacy' of the space--light movable furniture is recommended to allow for movement and the sharing of space. Access to the upper level will exclude those in the proximate residents who are immobile--use of the lower level for local meetings must be considered (i.e. potential Resident Association meetings).

It has also been noted that a display board displaying local information, adverts and events would be useful (outside/inside lower floor or both--see also museum and exhibition space).

The floods that impacted York also impacted the method of consultation. Some unprecedented feedback was gained during this time through conversations with residents. As a result, unprecedented uses of the building have been highly effective in interacting with residents, connecting with other activists/organisations. The events have impacted the consideration of how the building can be utilised--for instance as a hub for information, meetings, raising funds and storing flood relief equipment. Obviously, future flooding should also be considered within the architectural and technical designs.

EDIBLE SPACE--There is very little in the way of negative comments and plans are already moving forward in the area to start raised bedding. The Nursery on Walmgate wishes to adopt at least one bed for their 15 children. A number of other large organisations have shown interest in this venture as volunteers themselves and also may provide donations of equipment/materials (see Travers Perkins- under big businesses tab). There may be high demand for edible space to manage so a 'garden' officer/role may be needed.

The 'horseshoe wall' is currently viewed as a barrier and may need to be attended to if further links to the nearby community are to be encouraged.

FAMILY/EDUCATIONAL USE--Nothing necessarily design worthy to comment on here. A supply of cushions for upstairs which could be stored both for kids events or school visits would be useful as would IT equipment upstairs. There is need for a Red Tower educational officer who mans the tower, and organises/promotes events. Local schools could walk, others might need to coach in and therefore car parking space. The ability to supply lunch should be an option. There is a value in using the upstairs space as exhibition space for children.

COMMUNITY KITCHEN--This achieved lower scores than CAFE, but the comments from residents have shown that refreshments being available (or access to make them) would be beneficial. Visitors walking the wall might also gain something *different* from helping themselves to tea-making facilities and submitting to a PAYF box.

MUSEUM and EXHIBITION SPACE--

As heritage is the theme running throughout the building, some form of interpretation should be displayed (see Heritage Interpretation Report). This has also been voiced as a useful way to present others heritage project--such as an Oral History Project by the York Irish Society, or for historical group Stamford Bridge, or for the York Past and Present group.

Using the Red Tower as exhibition space will be of high demand from artists and other craft work. This will be a potentially a good opportunity for revenue.

BUSINESS VENUE: Business venue was not ticked by many residents. However it is clear from having spoken to a number of businesses & local organisation that the space upstairs would be a viable use. After speaking to Clements Hall team, it seems there is high demand for intimate spaces for counselling and therapist sessions (by large organisation such as the NHS). Changing Lives, a branch of a national charity, based on Walmgate, have been seeking places where they can counsel their clients in a non-judgemental and intimate environment and are willing to pay to hire space. Morrisons and Waitrose have both highlighted use of the upstairs space as being potentially suitable for staff meetings/events. HISCOX may also provide a pool of micro businesses who could make use of the space but more 'targeting' and relationship building is required.

Identified potential users:

Through the results of the consultation feedback of Step 2, the following are identified as key users and audiences. The users have been colour coded, and ordered in their suggested use frequency and access (starting with highest first).

It is acknowledged that without experiential data, this proposed frequency, the use and indeed the user categories themselves (which in actuality can all overlap) are preliminary. Further research could be done in this area in the future.

NB: The use of café and community kitchen has been combined in recognition of the feedback above.

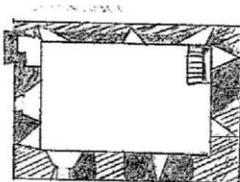
Table 3. User groups, use and frequency.

User group	Use	Space
<i>Residents: Red Tower centric</i>	<i>Community meeting place, Edible Space, Family Educational use, Café + Community kitchen, Business venue</i>	<i>Upper and lower floor use</i>

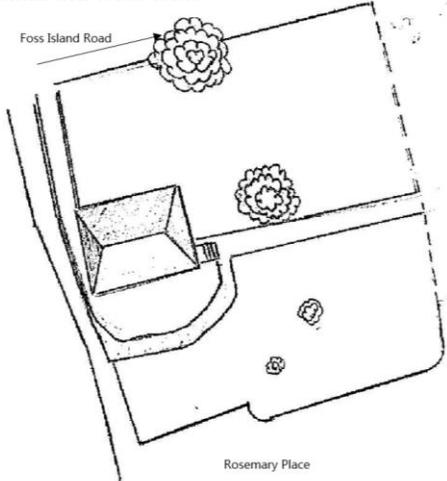
<i>International, national, regional and local visitors</i>	<i>Café, Museum and Exhibition space, Family/educational use</i>	<i>Lower floor use and outer area</i>
<i>Business Users: Corporate</i>	<i>Business venue, Exhibition space, Café + Kitchen</i>	<i>Upper and lower floor use</i>
<i>Business Users: Independent</i>	<i>Business venue, Exhibition Space, Café + Kitchen</i>	<i>Upper and lower floor use</i>
<i>Volunteers</i>	<i>Museum and Exhibition Space, Café + Kitchen, Edible Growing Space, Family/educational use</i>	<i>lower and outer area use</i>
<i>Educational organisations--schools and nurseries</i>	<i>Museum and Exhibition space, Business Venue for hire, Café + kitchen</i>	<i>upper, lower and outer area use</i>
<i>Local Charities and organisations</i>	<i>Business Venue for hire, Edible Space</i>	<i>upper floor use and outer area</i>
<i>Networks of History/Archaeological groups or organisations in York</i>	<i>Museum and Exhibition Space (web promotions)</i>	<i>lower floor use, communication use</i>
<i>Networks of historic venues in York</i>	<i>Web promotions and correspondence</i>	<i>communication use</i>

RED TOWER FEEDBACK FORM

Upper Level



Aerial View of Red Tower



RED TOWER FEEDBACK FORM

****PLEASE READ INFO SHEET ATTACHED****

The Red Tower Team is looking to put this historic building and outer area to community use. Your ideas are important as feedback for the Red Tower project. If you are happy, your feedback will go into our report and future funding bids. While we hope to take on ideas and needs, not everything will be possible.

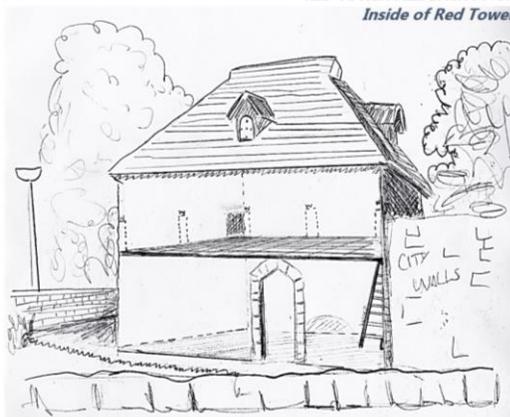
Please fill out the following questions and feel free to 'sketch' any ideas onto the images of the building and garden areas on the right. Filling in this form will help Katrina, the researcher, see whether images are useful during heritage work (see her info sheet attached).

Name:	
Are you a – (please tick) Resident? Visitor? Business owner? Local organisation? Student? Other?	Have you heard of or been to the Red Tower before? Please give details:
In terms of local services (e.g. amenities, food, leisure) do you think the Walmgate and Navigation Rd area needs anything?	
Do you think the Red Tower should be restored to meet local needs? Please give your opinion:	
Depending on answer above, if the Red Tower were to be restored it should be a: <ul style="list-style-type: none"> i. museum ii. business venue iii. an educational/family resource iv. community kitchen v. community meeting place vi. cafe vii. an edible growing space viii. multi-use (please tick all that apply) ix. other –please give examples: 	
<i>Please feel free to draw and make comment on the picture of the building and its garden areas overleaf.</i>	

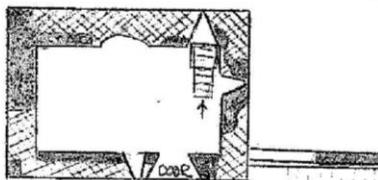
(If not applicable, skip to next box) What are your business/organisational needs?		
What are the needs of your clients?		
If the Red Tower was fully restored in the way you suggest, would you be interested in being involved as a volunteer or as a partner? (Please circle) YES/NO		
If the Red Tower was fully restored in the way you suggest, how often might you want to make use of it? (Please circle) <ul style="list-style-type: none"> a. Twice a week b. Once a week c. Once a fortnight d. Once a month or less 		
Extra comments:		
Postcode	Occupation	Email +/or phone:
Please sign here to show you have read and accept the information sheet, and that you are happy for the information you give here to be used in Katrina's Red Tower research. You have the right to withdraw at all times.		
Signed:		Date:
For Researcher:		Date:
Location:		

RED TOWER FEEDBACK FORM

Inside of Red Tower



Ground Level



D.viii Paper-based Media

Open Resident Weekend Postcard 2015

The Red Tower Project



@timinyork1 #redtoweryork
www.timinyork.org.uk



The Red Tower Project

TIM is rethinking the Red Tower, and would love your views.

What do you think?

- Community kitchen
- Café
- Growing Space
- Other _____

Address Obscured

If you want us to contact you, please give us your email:

Student Picnic Event May 2015

The Red Tower Project

@timinyork1 #redtoweryork
www.timinyork.org.uk



“Bring and share”
FOOD & MUSIC EVENT: 12th May
3pm till 6pm

Join us at the Red Tower for an
afternoon of light acoustic
guitar playing.

Bring food, soft drinks
and ideas!

Rethinking the Red Tower!

The Red Tower Project

TIM is rethinking the Red Tower, and
would love your views.

What do you think?

- Community kitchen
- Café
- Growing Space
- Other _____

Address Obscured

If you want us to contact you, please
give us your email:

June Flyer (Pop Up Cafes) 2015



Rethinking the Red Tower

Red Tower Project

Opening a 'pop-up' Tea, Coffee & Cakes stall

Every Sat
11am-1pm
Starting
20th June

*Pay as you
Feel*

Chance to discuss local needs for the the Red Tower, get involved, or simply enjoy the place!

What's going on?

An enthusiastic (bit mad) group have been thinking about re-using the Red Tower! It's got potential & our ideas so far include:

- a community space
- a green kitchen/cafe
- growing space (started on this!)
- a pop-up cinema
- venue for events and meetings

But we'd like to know what the locals want! Let us know by popping by on Saturdays for a chat or contact us by email

-->-->

Want to be more involved?

Are you interested and able to give some time to help at the Red Tower? Either gardening or helping organise events? If so please let the group know.

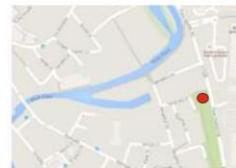
We're accepting unwanted stuff--crockery, mugs, and rugs especially--but please email or notify us first.



Regular water donations for the garden are much appreciated, at any time!

Where to find us:

The Red Tower is just opposite the shops:



You can also contact the group online via:

email-yourredtower@gmail.com
FBook- Your Red Tower
Twitter- #RedTowerYork

We look forward to hearing from you!

Heritage Open Day September 2015



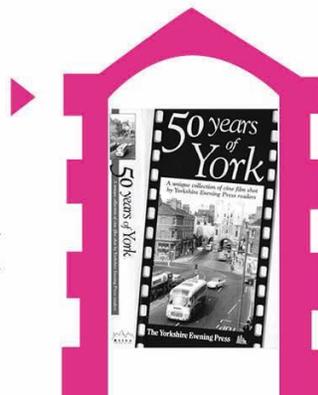
The Red Tower Open Day!

This is a unique opportunity to step back into history and explore this beautiful 15th Century building. It is the only bricked section of the York walls which caused great upset to the stone masons, so much so it led to murder.

There will be no such disputes on our 'Open Day'. There will be fun activities for little and big kids, as well as refreshments such as tea, coffee and cakes.

Image of minors obscured

We will be showcasing an archived film to take you back down memory lane, thanks to local heroine Joyce. '50 years of York' is a collection of home movies from the 1950's made by readers of the Yorkshire press in our very own pop-up cinema. Just check out those old buses!



Christmas Event December 2015



INVITATION to FESTIVE FUNTIME at THE RED TOWER



Please join us at the Red Tower for our first ever Christmas event!

Doors will be open on **Saturday 12th December, from 11am until 2pm**, with a range of fun and tasty activities including chestnut roasting, wreath making and eating mince pies. Here you can get a hot cup of mulled apple juice and tasty apple cakes too, sourced from the local fruit collection initiative Abundance.

In light of the recent funding from Locality, the team are keen to discuss ideas for the Red Tower with residents and welcome any opportunities for others to get involved.

All welcome!

Festive wishes



The Red Tower Team (yourredtower@gmail.com)



RED TOWER²
OPEN
TODAY FOR
FLOOD
RELIEF
11AM-2PM

² Flood Relief Action, January 2015

**OPEN
TODAY**

12-2pm

**Pick up free
cleaning products,
tools & toiletries
for flood clean up!
Tell your friends!**

Open Residents' Weekend January 2016

Residents Photography Competition & Open Weekend 30th/31st January 2016

The Red Tower, Foss Islands, York

On the 30th and 31st of January the Red Tower will be open to the public once again, as part of residents weekend. Doors open 10-3pm on both Saturday and Sunday.

In recognition of the recent flooding, we want to hold a '**flood-photos competition**' with gifts to the winners in the following four categories:

1. local heroism (spotlight on groups or individuals: make sure they are ok to have their photo up)
2. picturesque flooding
3. Overcoming it together (large action shots)
4. historical/past flooding

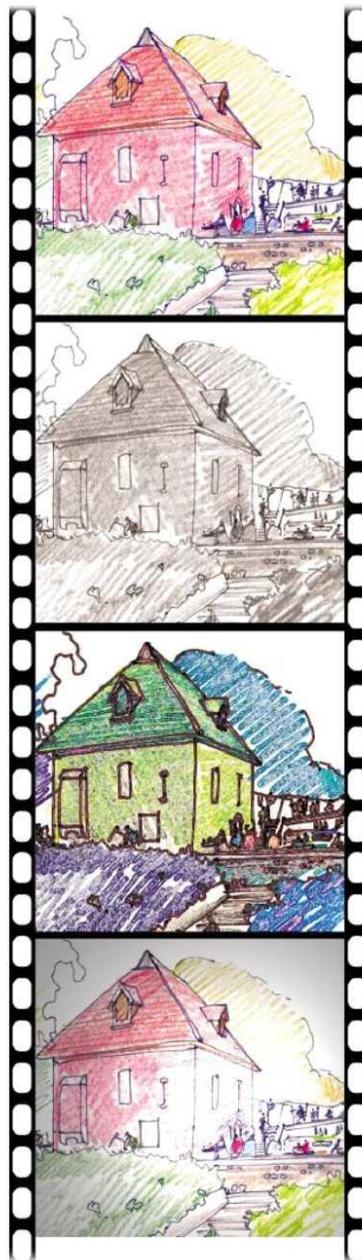
In order to receive photographs we ask to people to follow these steps:

- Select one photo per category (so up to 4 photos in total can be entered per person)
- All photos taken by the photographer (not downloaded off Facebook or Google or the Press etc.) are credited with their name, a simple image title and a description of the shot or location.
- Please send your photos to yourredtower@gmail.com **before Wednesday 27th 5pm** to be included in the competition.

A PHOTO QUIZ with additional prizes will be running on the day, so come test your visual knowledge of York!

PLUS: donation money will be collected to help those affected, and free cleaning products can also be acquired.

AND: cakes, hot drinks and other snacks will be available, so why not come in for a chat and a bun?





The flooding has made us think more about how Red Tower could be useful in the future.

And we've got funding to research how Red Tower can be restored & how much it would cost.

BUT we still want to know what you, the residents of Walmgate, think about Red Tower's function.

We need your help & want you to have your say!

COME & CHAT AT THESE SESSIONS

Thurs 18th Feb 12-4pm

Sat 20th Feb 12-2pm

Tues 23rd Feb 2-4pm

Kat will be at Red Tower with ears open!

AND IF YOU ARE INTERESTED IN BECOMING FURTHER INVOLVED IN THE RED TOWER PLEASE ASK ABOUT THE

RT Workshop Sat 19th March

(Email youredtower@gmail.com or phone Kat on 07799716217 for more details!)

³ Poster inserted into envelope with Feedback Form February 2016

Flood Relief Activity February 2016

ATTENTION: THIS SATURDAY 27th

1. CLEANING PRODUCTS & FOOD GOODS AVAILABLE FOR RESIDENTS

Bags of cleaning products & food (non-perishable) are at Red Tower to be given out this Saturday. After Saturday they are going to be sold at a centre (date+venue TBC): funds to go the flood relief TWO RIDINGS FUND.

If you need help carrying we can assist, just meet us here between 10-1.

2. TWO RIDINGS FUND APPLICATION FORMS AVAILABLE AT RED TOWER

You can claim money from the TWO RIDINGS FUND if you have been affected by the floods.

Please ask about this inside.

3. RED TOWER FEEDBACK FORMS

If you didn't get a chance to give Red Tower Feedback forms you can still—we'll be open. Tea, Coffee & Biscuits as per usual.

March 12th 2016 Edible York Garden Project Volunteer Call

Got green fingers?

On Saturday 12th March EDIBLE YORK will be supporting residents to create a wooden planter for growing vegetables as well as planting an orchard of lovely small fruit trees for all to enjoy. Volunteers are needed to help:

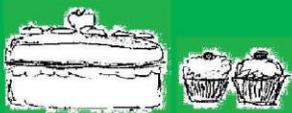
- fill the planter with soil
- plant the beautiful fruit trees
- make a wire fence to protect the trees
- lay wood chip

HELPERS OF ALL AGES WELCOME 11.0'CLOCK ONWARDS

Tools and adult gloves provided, kiddies will need to bring own if you don't want mucky hands!

BUT IF YOU'VE GOT *BAKERS* HANDS INSTEAD....

On the same day from 11 O'CLOCK, RED TOWER will be open. We are looking to recruit volunteers for a 'cake committee' to run over the summer. If you are interested, pop around the wall and sign up! We'll have tea, soup and other nibbles to keep the gardeners warm too.



Edible York: info@edibleyork.org.uk.
Red Tower youreddtower@gmail.com.



Appendix E

E.i Comparative Research Question 1

Table 16. Summary of Research Answers from Chapters Five, Six & Seven.

<i>Place Theme</i> → PLACE THEME RQ: ↓	<i>West Offices</i>	<i>Pre-2011 Heritage Asset Transfers</i>	<i>Red Tower</i>
Values & Value Actions	--Valuing heritage in (and as part of) place --Tourism Value --Understanding others' heritage value --Valuing data for others' heritage value and best practice --Heritage as part of growth/identity	--Interest or unfulfilled value action --Organisational value-action: --Historical value-action: --Visual value-action --Financial value-action	--Situational/place based value --Green value-action --'TIM ethos/thinking' --Wider York (CYC) value --Transactions/exchange of things or finance --History meets present --Kids --Organisational value-action --Enjoying community work/interaction --Explorative value-action --Making a contribution/handiwork --Home-making
Visions	Visions are connected between the different domains; each have their own initial goals to pursue which feed into a greater visions for city management (i.e. HER to reveal historic	In both asset case studies the vision was eventually adapted from the cycle of catalysts, value-actions, goals and outcomes and eventually emerged at key moments in the restoration processes. The	The value-actions in the previous section do have some relationship with some (but not all) of the visions which in some cases are realised overtime. Using 'colour coding', the values and value actions can be shown to correspond

	<p>data for different audiences, or Neighbourhood planning to support community groups in providing suitable policies, in line with Local Plan). Values signify best practices toward these policy established visions.</p>	<p>vision feeds into the media engagement.</p>	<p>to feeding into different components of the Red Tower vision. Through this understanding of the data, I can see that there are times when values 'blend together' through action, resulting in some of the ongoing visions becoming reality. The key vision for the building emerged after the RJF project did not come to fore, the emergence of COMA funding and the consultation period after the floods. Moreover, when people were describing their visions for the project, especially in the space, was that they would use they arms and bodies to describe the visioning of the space that they could see.</p>
<p>Challenges/Contrasting Values</p>	<p>These are resource dependent (i.e. lack of staff, skills, finances and time). Managing the disagreements between council workers and citizens of York and the agreement of what counts as knowledge or evidence is an ongoing challenge (and</p>	<p>Several challenges and contrasts in value (i.e. between the Tithe Barn and NYCC, or Holgate Windmill and the HLF) meant that reactive management, sustained civic or financial support for the asset project were drawn upon. This shows the perseverance and</p>	<p>Numerous challenges were coded so that that corresponded with the value and value-actions (i.e. the floods). Situational challenges and Community interaction are noted to be two such challenges that blend to together—i.e. physical place being a barrier for interaction. Moreover, contrasting values from different groups (i.e. Residents)</p>

	arguably the crux of contrasting values and opposing views).	adaptability of both restoration project groups.	show different priorities in place (one of which is considered in competition with Red Tower).
Collaboration	<p>Specific domains of the council seek to support collaborating communities in differing ways across the whole of York to achieve their own visions (i.e. via Communities & Equalities), whilst understanding how their vision or their organisational structure may fluctuate.</p> <p>This may be in contrast with other visions such as the Local Plan.</p>	<p>Proximity is mutually inclusive to civic action in both cases. Levels of affluence may account for the level of support for the project in the area and the capabilities of the organisation involved.</p>	<p>Over 40 people and organisations took active involvement in the development of the project. Proximity was not the key to high interaction. Many of those actively involved (particularly the core team during the summer of 2015) were not from the immediate local area and brought with them different skills, values and their own visions</p> <p>Connections and working relationships seemed to have occurred through interactions in place or through recruitment via posters or other contexts. In terms of that 'invisible' community the level of apathy towards the previous projects shows this was an issue entrenched in the area. The level of affluence is noticeably lower.</p>

Engagement	<p>Other engagements supported through different forms of Communication tools and media. Conversations, such as with the Local Plan, can be spatialised and configured through different contexts and platforms (offline and online). Trends have developed in these strategies overtime (and in 2015, changed to consider face-to-face strategies as best practice).</p>	<p>Other forms of local engagement (those not actively involved in the groups) were generated by the proximate leafleting campaigns and are indicated by the numbers of people attending public meetings, contributing their opinions and making financial donations.</p>	<p>The most fruitful way of engaging with people (in terms of gaining the most comments and feedback) is to hold an event (i.e. Open Residents Weekend) and provide an informal way of providing comment (i.e. post-its). Talking to people opportunistically in Rosemary Place had some benefits but, as has been reported, not many people would linger in the place near Red Tower. The feedback forms provided further insight into engagement processes and the difficulties of physical access (and privacy) as did the posters and flyers. In essence doing several different forms of engagement appears to have been the best strategy for the Red Tower. Even if some of these do not provide as much results in spite of the effort and energy spent (the posters for instance) they could lead to engagement.</p>
Locality	<p>Locality is known (and can be revealed) as historically comprised yet contemporary localities are impacted by contemporary 'drivers' (such as housing). York localities</p>	<p>Organizational frameworks are created for, around, within, inside and then bound to historic spaces, bringing them to fore within new conceptualizations of place.</p>	<p>The concept of locality brings with it several challenges (the relationship between Walmgate and the Red Tower is beset physical and social barriers). But it also brings to fore the concept of</p>

	may be 'scaled' in terms of the priorities (or visions) between pavement politics to the city at large.		situational/place-based value. This is attributed to the 'nugget' and the physical drawing-in of the tower itself.
--	---	--	--